

الإيمان ميسراً - الجزء الخامس

Eemaan
MADE EASY

PART
5
FIVE

معرفة
اليوم الآخر
KNOWING



The
Last Day

مُحَمَّدُ الْجِبَالِي

Muhammad al-Jibaly

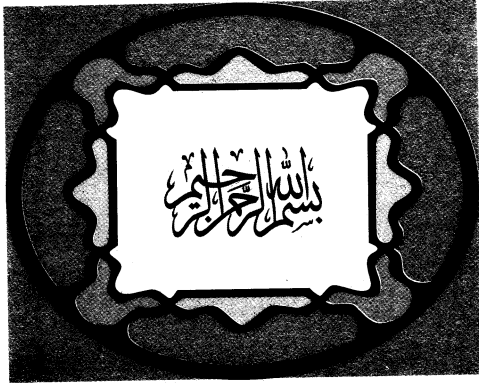
منشورات الكتاب والسنة

Al-Kitaab & as-Sunnah Publishing

Eemaan Made Easy - Part 5

مَعْرِفَةُ الْيَوْمِ الْآخِرِ

Knowing the Last Day



الإيمانُ صَيْسراً - الجزءُ الخامس
EEMAAAN MADE EASY - PART 5

مَعْرِفَةُ الْيَوْمِ الْآخِرِ
KNOWING THE
LAST DAY

محمد بن مصطفى الجبالي

MUHAMMAD MUSTAFĀ AL-JIBĀLY

مَنْشُورَاتُ الْكِتَابِ وَالسُّنَّةِ
AL-KITAAB & AS-SUNNAH PUBLISHING

Copyright © *Al-Kitaab & as-Sunnah* Publishing, 2004

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced in any language, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means — electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise — without the express permission of the publisher.

Knowing the Last Day
(Eemaan Made Easy – Part 5)
Reprinted 2007

18+198 p. 24 × 18 cm
ISBN 1-891229-09-5

Published by:

Al-Kitāb & as-Sunnah Publishing
USA ☐ PO Box 2542, Arlington, Texas, 76004
Lebanon-Beirut ☎+961-3-046338
Saudi Arabia ☐ PO Box 5683, Madinah
☎+966-50-9600572 / 4-8466002, ☎ 4-8450539
★ www.kspublications.com
✉ info@kspublications.com

Printed by:

Al-Maktab al-Islāmī
☐ PO Box 11/3771, Beirut, Lebanon
☎+961-5-456280, ☎ 5-450657
★ www.almaktab-alislami.com
✉ islamic_of@almaktab-alislami.com

TABLE OF CONTENTS

TABLE OF CONTENTS v

PREFACE xi

Opening Sermon	xi
A Word to Parents and Educators	xiii
The Goals of True Education (xiii)	
Faults in Current Islaamic Curricula (xiii)	
Mending the Rift (xiii)	
<i>Eemaan</i> Made Easy	xiv
Technicalities	xv
Translating and Transliterating Arabic (xv)	
Translating and Referencing Qur'aan and <i>Hadeeth</i> (xvi)	
Notable Utterances (xvii)	
Acknowledgements	xviii

CHAPTER 1

THE FIFTH PILLAR 1

The Six Pillars of Faith	1
Importance of Believing in the Last Day	2
Names of the Last Day	3
Purpose of the Creation	6
When Will the Last Day Come?	7
Events of the Last Day	7
Questions and Exercises	9

CHAPTER 2

RESURRECTION & ASSEMBLY 13

The Day of Doom	13
Death of All Created Beings (13)	
Destruction of the Universe (14)	
Recreation	16

The World's Recreation (16)	
The Resurrection (17)	
Allaah Exhibits His Power	21
The Great Assembly	23
No Escape, No Exemption (23)	
The People Will First Be Assembled Naked (24)	
The Sun's Approach (25)	
Duration of the Assembly (26)	
The Believers During Assembly	27
They Will Be Secure from the Major Fear (28)	
They Will Be Sheltered under Allaah's Throne (28)	
They Will Find Relief from Hardships (30)	
Their Wounds Will Smell Like Musk (31)	
Place of the Just People (32)	
The Sinful During Assembly	32
Shrinking the Arrogant (32)	
Engulfing the Oppressors in Darkness (33)	
Fire-Branding Those Who Do Not Pay <i>Zakaah</i> (34)	
Exposing Betrayal (35)	
Punishment for Taking Bribe (35)	
The Disbelievers During Assembly	36
They Will Lose All Hope (36)	
Their Eyes Will Be Dimmed and Blinded (37)	
They Will Walk on Their Faces (38)	
They Will Be Dumb and Deaf (39)	
They Will Be in Shackles and in Garments of Torture (39)	
Their Faces Will Be Darkened (40)	
They Will Bite on Their Hands (40)	
They Will Wish to Return to the First Life (41)	
They Will Hate Their Friends and Leaders (42)	
They Will Wish They Can Ransom Themselves (43)	
Questions and Exercises	44

CHAPTER 3

INTERCESSION & JUDGMENT 49

Introduction	49
--------------------	----

The Major Intercession	50
The Judgment	53
Allaah's Coming (54)	
Bringing Hell to View (55)	
Presenting the Creation Before the Lord (56)	
Carrying the Burdens (58)	
No Kinship Ties (59)	
Allaah Will Speak to All (61)	
First Matters of Judgment (63)	
Five Inevitable Questions (65)	
Account Auditing (66)	
The Bankrupt (66)	
The First Persons to Be Indicted (68)	
Covering a Believer's Sins (70)	
The Judgment Is Final (71)	
Satan's Conclusive Speech (72)	
Ahl ul-Fatrah (People Without Messengers)	73
The Witnesses	75
Allaah's Testimony (75)	
Testimony of the Angels (76)	
Testimony of the Body (76)	
Testimony of the Earth (79)	
The Scales	80
The Most Accurate Scales (80)	
The Scales Will Be Huge (80)	
The Deeds Will Be Put in the Two Pans (81)	
Things That Make the Scales Heavy (82)	
Things That Do Not Weigh in the Scales (85)	
The Records	86
Records of the Righteous (86)	
Records of the Wrongdoers (87)	
The Prophet's Pond	88
The <i>Siraat</i>	91
Various Intercessions	94
Intercession of the Prophets and the Angels (94)	
Intercession of the Believers (96)	

Allaah's Intercession (97)	
The Qur'aan's Intercession (97)	
The Bridge	98
Questions and Exercises	100

CHAPTER 4

PARADISE 107

Introducing <i>Jannah</i>	107
What is <i>Jannah</i> ? (107)	
The Creation of <i>Jannah</i> (108)	
Description of <i>Jannah</i>	109
Its Names (109)	
It Is Beyond Imagination (110)	
Its Eternality (111)	
Its Gates (113)	
Its Levels (114)	
The First People to Enter it (115)	
The Last People to Enter it (117)	
Its Trees and Vegetation (119)	
Its Rivers (120)	
Qualities of those Who Will Enter <i>Jannah</i>	122
They Work for It (122)	
They Believe in Allaah (123)	
They Act Righteously (124)	
They Have <i>Taqwaa</i> (124)	
They Repent and Turn Back to Allaah (125)	
They Follow the Prophet and His Companions (126)	
They Possess Good Manners (127)	
They Do Not Have Envy and They Rely on Allaah (128)	
They Fight Against Wicked Desires (128)	
They Strive and Sacrifice with Patience (129)	
They Feed, Fast, and Pray at Night (130)	
They Are Mostly Weak and Poor (130)	
Pleasures of the People of <i>Jannah</i>	132
Their Youthfulness (132)	
Their Gardens (134)	

Their Spouses and Families (135)	
Their Food (137)	
Their Clothing and Jewelry (143)	
Their Dwellings (144)	
Their Seats (145)	
Their Servants (145)	
Their Markets (146)	
Their Greatest Prize (147)	
Questions and Exercises	150

CHAPTER 5

HELL 155

Introducing Hell	155
What is Hell? (155)	
The Creation of Hell (155)	
Description of Hell	156
Its Names (156)	
Its Eternality (157)	
Its Gates (158)	
Its Expanse (159)	
Its Rage and Greed (159)	
Its Intensity and Fuel (161)	
Its Levels of Torture (162)	
Its Guards (164)	
Who Will Enter Hell?	165
All People (165)	
Most People (166)	
Those Who Reject the Faith (167)	
The Hypocrites (169)	
Satan and His Supporters (170)	
Those Who Commit Major Sins (170)	
Those Who Disobey Allaah and His Messenger (171)	
Those Who Like to Corrupt the Believers (173)	
Agonies of the People of Hell	173
Their "Living" (173)	
Their Size (174)	

Their Food and Drink (176)	
Their Attire (179)	
Their Bedding and Covering (180)	
Their Weeping and Wailing (181)	
Their Humiliation (182)	
Their Emotional Torture (182)	
Hating Their Leaders (183)	
Hating Their Relatives (183)	
Their Quarrelling (184)	
Their Helplessness (185)	
Their Begging (186)	
Questions and Exercises	188

CHAPTER 6

CONCLUSION 193

Preparing for the Last Day	193
<i>Jannah</i>	194
Hell	195
Supplication	195

ARABIC VOCABULARY 197

PREFACE

Opening Sermon

إِنَّ الْحَمْدَ لِلَّهِ، نَحْمَدُهُ وَنَسْتَعِينُهُ وَنَسْتَغْفِرُهُ،
وَنَعُوذُ بِاللَّهِ مِنْ شُرُورِ أَنْفُسِنَا وَمِنْ سَيِّئَاتِ أَعْمَالِنَا.
مَنْ يَهْدِهِ اللَّهُ فَلَا مُضِلَّ لَهُ، وَمَنْ يَضِلَّ فَلَا هَادِيَ لَهُ.

Al-hamdu lillaah. Indeed, all praise is due to Allaah. We praise Him and seek His help and forgiveness. We seek refuge with Allaah from our souls' evils and our wrong doings. He whom Allaah guides, no one can misguide; and he whom He misguides, no one can guide.

وَأَشْهَدُ أَنْ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا اللَّهُ، وَحْدَهُ لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ.
وَأَشْهَدُ أَنَّ مُحَمَّدًا عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُهُ.

I bear witness that there is no (true) god except Allaah — alone without any partners. And I bear witness that Muhammad (ﷺ) is His 'abd (servant) and messenger.¹

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا اتَّقُوا اللَّهَ حَقَّ تَقَاتِهِ،
وَلَا تَمُوتُنَّ إِلَّا وَأَنْتُمْ مُسْلِمُونَ﴾ آل عمران ١٠٢

«O you who believe! Revere Allaah the right reverence, and do not die except as Muslims.»²

1 The above two paragraphs, together with the following three portions of Qur'aan, are called *Khutbat ul-Haajah* (the Sermon of Need). Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) often started his speeches with this sermon, and he was keen to teach it to his companions. The *hadeeths* in this regard are recorded by Muslim, Aboo Daawood, an-Nasaa'ee, and others, and are narrated by Ibn Mas'ood, Ibn 'Abbaas, and others (رضي الله عنهم). A full discussion of the various reports of this sermon is provided by al-Albaanee in his booklet, "*Khutbat ul-Haajah*", published by al-Maktab ul-Islaamee, Beirut.

2 *Aal 'Imraan* 3:102.

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ اتَّقُوا رَبَّكُمُ الَّذِي خَلَقَكُمْ مِنْ نَفْسٍ وَاحِدَةٍ، وَخَلَقَ مِنْهَا زَوْجَهَا، وَبَثَّ مِنْهُمَا رِجَالًا كَثِيرًا وَنِسَاءً، وَاتَّقُوا اللَّهَ الَّذِي تَسَاءَلُونَ بِهِ وَالْأَرْحَامَ، إِنَّ اللَّهَ كَانَ عَلَيْكُمْ رَقِيبًا﴾ النساء ١

«O people! Revere your Lord who has created you from a single soul, created from it its mate, and dispersed from both of them many men and women. Revere Allaah through whom you demand things from one another, and (cherish the ties of) the wombs. Indeed, Allaah is ever-watchful over you.»¹

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا اتَّقُوا اللَّهَ وَقُولُوا قَوْلًا سَدِيدًا ۖ يُصْلِحْ لَكُمْ أَعْمَالَكُمْ، وَيَغْفِرْ لَكُمْ ذُنُوبَكُمْ، وَمَنْ يُطِيعِ اللَّهَ وَرَسُولَهُ فَقَدْ فَازَ فَوْزًا عَظِيمًا﴾ الأحزاب ٧٠-٧١

«O you who believe! Revere Allaah and say just words. He will then rectify your deeds and forgive your sins. He who obeys Allaah and His Messenger has certainly achieved a great victory.»²

أَمَّا بَعْدُ، فَإِنَّ خَيْرَ الْحَدِيثِ كِتَابُ اللَّهِ، وَخَيْرَ الْهَدْيِ هَدْيُ مُحَمَّدٍ (ﷺ)، وَشَرُّ الْأُمُورِ مُحْدَثَاتُهَا، وَكُلُّ مُحْدَثَةٍ بِدْعَةٌ، وَكُلُّ بِدْعَةٍ ضَلَالَةٌ، وَكُلُّ ضَلَالَةٍ فِي النَّارِ.

Indeed, the best speech is Allaah's (ﷻ) speech; the best guidance is Muhammad's (ﷺ) guidance; and the worst matters (in creed or worship) are those innovated (by the people), for every innovated matter is a *bid'ah* (prohibited innovation), and every *bid'ah* is an act of misguidance that (whoever initiated it) will reside in the Fire.³

1 An-Nisaa' 4:1.

2 Al-Ahzaab 33:70-71.

3 Muslim and others have recorded from Jaabir Bin 'Abdillaah (رضي الله عنه) that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) used to start his speeches with this paragraph.

A Word to Parents and Educators

THE GOALS OF TRUE EDUCATION

True Education is that which improves a person's knowledge and understanding of his *Deen*. It makes him more aware of the purpose of his creation and his role in this life. It builds in his heart a strong belief that enables him to distinguish between the right and wrong, and a strong *eemaan* that compels him to abide by the right and refrain from the wrong.

True education is a social necessity. It is a prerequisite for attaining success and dignity similar to those that were enjoyed by the first Muslim generations.

FAULTS IN CURRENT ISLAAMIC CURRICULA

It is indeed sad to see that education, with the above goals, has largely vanished from among the Muslims. Most of those who took its lead lack in clear Islaamic knowledge and vision. In their heart, there is a great void that they attempt to fill with numerous imported educational theories, causing a severe distortion to the Islaamic identity.

Verily, a quick review of the available Islaamic curricula, as well as the books available for children's reading, exposes an obvious problem. There is an serious confusion in determining the right approach and material to present to the children.

We find that the themes of many Islaamic children's books revolve around magic and superstition, deviant beliefs and practices, historical falsehoods and slanders, offensive thought, or disguised invitations to religious or ideological beliefs that contradict Islaam!

MENDING THE RIFT

All of this has prompted us to write for our beloved youth books meant to help in filling the current gaps and mending the current rifts.

In these books, as in the rest of our publications, we base the material that we present on the authentic sources: Allaah's Book, His Messenger's (ﷺ) Sunnah, and the clear understanding of the true scholars of Islaam.

In these books, we use easy language and present the

concepts in a simplified manner. We do this without compromising the accuracy or breadth of coverage. This makes these books ideal as textbooks for elementary and intermediate school levels. In addition, their attractive appearance and numerous exercises make them useful sources of both knowledge and entertainment.

This publication is, therefore, a humble response to our realization of a great responsibility: the responsibility of bringing forth, before the English speaking youth, reading and study materials that refine the Islaamic concepts and present Islaam pure and simple, as close as possible to the way that it was understood and practiced by its early good pioneers - the *Salaf*.

Eemaan Made Easy

The "*Eemaan Made Easy*" series covers the six pillars of *Eemaan* mentioned in the *hadeeth* of Jibreel (ﷺ) and elaborates on some subjects related to them. The material is well-founded on authentic proofs from the Qur'aan and Sunnah. The books are written in easy language, making them accessible to individuals with limited vocabulary.

This series covers the six pillars of *Eemaan* and related subjects as follows:

1. Knowing Allaah
2. Knowing the Angels
3. Knowing Allaah's Books & the Qur'aan
4. Knowing Allaah's Prophets & Messengers
5. Knowing the Last Day
6. Knowing Allaah's Decree — the *Qadar*

Each book is structured into chapters, sections, and subsection to organize learning and facilitate grasping the concepts. Furthermore, each chapter includes exercises to emphasize, review, and reinforce the concepts. All of this makes the *Eemaan Made Easy* series a valuable source of reliable study material for schools and individuals.

Technicalities

TRANSLATING AND TRANSLITERATING ARABIC

In our attempt to minimize the use of Arabic terms, we use transliterated Arabic terms in the following two situations only:

- a) When no English expression is found that can reflect the same meaning as the original term.
- b) When it is judged that an Arabic term is of such importance that it is essential to familiarize the reader with it.

At the end of this book, we have included a glossary defining common Arabic terms that fulfill the above criteria.

Except for proper nouns, transliterated Arabic terms are *italicized*. In general, the rules of English pronunciation can be applied. The following table includes additional symbols employed in this book to help pronounce Arabic terms.

Symbol	Stands for	English Equivalent Sounds
aa, Aa	(ا) <i>Alif</i> (long vowel a)	Mostly: <u>M</u> an, <u>s</u> ad. At times: <u>F</u> ather, <u>h</u> ard, <u>g</u> od.
oo, Oo	(و) <i>Waaw</i> (long vowel u)	<u>R</u> oot, <u>s</u> oup, <u>f</u> lute.
ee, Ee	(ي) <i>Yaa'</i> (long vowel i)	<u>S</u> eed, <u>l</u> ean, <u>p</u> iece, <u>r</u> ecive.
'	(ء) <i>Hamzah</i>	The first consonant vocal sound uttered when saying: <u>a</u> t, <u>i</u> t or <u>o</u> h.
Th, th	(ث) <i>Thaa'</i>	<u>T</u> hree, <u>m</u> oth.
H, h	(ح) <i>Haa'</i>	No equivalent. Produced in the lower throat, below "h". Resembles the sound produced after swallowing.
Kh, kh	(خ) <i>Khaa'</i>	No equivalent. Produced in the back of the mouth and top of the throat.

Symbol	Stands for	English Equivalent Sounds
<u>Th, th</u>	(ذ) <i>Thaal</i>	<u>There, mother.</u>
S, s	(ص) <i>Saad</i>	A deeper "s" sound. Somewhat close to the "sc" in "muscle".
Dh, dh	(ض) <i>Dhaad</i>	Sounds deeper than a "d". Produced by touching the tongue to the mouth's roof.
T, t	(ط) <i>Tah</i>	Similar but deeper than a "t".
Z, z	(ظ) <i>Zah</i>	A deeper <i>thaal</i> , produced by touching the tip of the tongue to the back of the front teeth.
'	(ع) <i>'Ayn</i>	Produced in the bottom of the throat, underneath "h".
Gh, gh	(غ) <i>Ghayn</i>	A gurgling sound produced in the back of the mouth, just above the <i>khaa'</i> . Similar to the "R" in some french accents.
Q, q	(ق) <i>Qaaf</i>	Somewhat similar to the "c" in "coffee".

TRANSLATING AND REFERENCING QUR'AAN AND HADEETH

The Qur'aan contains Allaah's exact words. These words cannot be exactly translated into other languages because of possible misinterpretations and limited human understanding. When an *aayah* is cited, the Arabic text is quoted followed, between double angle quotation marks, by the English meaning in **«boldface»**. The meaning is extracted from books of *tafseer* and accessible translations.

The location of a Qur'aanic citation is specified in a footnote, providing the name of the *soorah*, its number, and the number(s) of the *aayah*(s) cited.










Similarly, the Arabic text of a *hadeeth* is quoted first. Its meaning is then presented in **«boldface»**, between single angle quotation marks. If the *hadeeth* relates a supplication, we usually

present, as well, a full transliteration to help pronounce the supplication.

A footnote normally specifies the location of a cited *hadeeth* in the books of Sunnah, as well as its degree of authenticity and the names of scholars who made such a judgment.

NOTABLE UTTERANCES

Out of love, appreciation, gratitude or other noble feelings, a Muslim is encouraged to say certain phrases at the mention of Allaah, His messengers, the angels, the *sahaabah*, or other righteous Muslims. We present these phrases in condensed Arabic calligraphy as follows:

Phrase	Said after	Transliteration	Meaning
	Allaah's Name	<i>Subhaanahoo wa ta'aalaa.</i>	He is exalted above weakness and indignity.
	Allaah's Name	<i>'Azza wa-jall.</i>	May He be exalted and glorified.
	Allaah's Name	<i>Jalla jalaaluh.</i>	May His glory be exalted.
	Muhammad or other prophets	<i>Salla 'Llaahu 'alayhi wa sallam.</i>	Allaah's peace and praise be on him.
	Prophets and angels	<i>'Alayh is-Salaam.</i>	Peace be on him.
	A male companion	<i>Radhiya 'Llaahu 'anhu.</i>	May Allaah be pleased with him.
	A female companion	<i>Radhiya 'Llaahu 'anhaa.</i>	May Allaah be pleased with her.
	Two companion	<i>Radhiya 'Llaahu 'anhumaa.</i>	May Allaah be pleased with them.
	Several companions	<i>Radhiya 'Llaahu 'anhum.</i>	May Allaah be pleased with them.

Phrase	Said after	Transliteration	Meaning
ﷻ	A scholar or righteous Muslim.	<i>Rahimahu 'Llaah.</i>	May Allaah have mercy on him.

When coming across any of these symbols, the reader is advised to say the complete phrase in order to obtain the reward of saying the appropriate *thiikr* or *du'aa'*.

Acknowledgements

All praise and thanks are due to our Lord (ﷻ) who facilitated completing this work. And may Allaah reward all the Muslims who helped and supported this effort in any way. In particular, may Allaah reward 'Abdullah al-Jibaly for helping in designing the cover, and Aalaa' and Arwaa al-Jibaly for proofreading the manuscript.

We ask Allaah (ﷻ) to make this humble effort helpful and fruitful to the Muslims, forgive our shortcomings, purify our work from hypocrisy and conceit, and accept it from us.

Our Lord, forgive us and all of the believers, and bestow Your peace and praise upon our Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ).

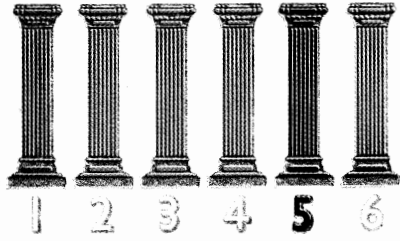
Muhammad al-Jibaly
2 Jumaadaa al-Aakhirah 1425
19 July 2004

CHAPTER 1

THE FIFTH PILLAR

The Six Pillars of Faith

In the first book of this series (Knowing Allaah), we discussed the Six Pillars of Faith. These pillars were mentioned in the *hadeeth* of Jibreel (ﷺ), when he came to the Prophet (ﷺ) and asked him about Islaam, *Eemaan*, *Ihsaan*, and the Last Hour. The Six Pillars are:



1. Belief in Allaah
2. Belief in the angels
3. Belief in the books
4. Belief in the messengers
5. Belief in the Last Day
6. Belief in the *qadar*.

We must believe in all of these pillars. Allaah (ﷻ) mentions the first four of them in the following *aayah*:

﴿ءَامَنَ الرَّسُولُ بِمَا أُنزِلَ إِلَيْهِ مِنْ رَبِّهِ، وَالْمُؤْمِنُونَ،
كُلٌّ ءَامَنَ بِاللَّهِ وَمَلَائِكَتِهِ وَكُتُبِهِ وَرُسُلِهِ﴾ البقرة ٢٨٥

«The Messenger (Muhammad) believes in what was sent down to him from his Lord, and so do the believers. They all believe in Allaah, His angels, His books, and His messengers.»¹

1 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:285.

Allaah (ﷻ) also mentions five of them in the following:

﴿لَيْسَ الْبِرُّ أَنْ تُوَلُّوا وُجُوهَكُمْ قِبَلَ الْمَشْرِقِ وَالْمَغْرِبِ، وَلَكِنَّ الْبِرَّ مَنْ ءَامَنَ بِاللَّهِ وَالْيَوْمِ الْآخِرِ وَالْمَلَائِكَةِ وَالْكِتَابِ وَالنَّبِيِّينَ، ...﴾ البقرة ١٧٧

«Righteousness does not (only) mean that you turn your faces toward east or west (in the prayer); righteousness is believing in Allaah, the Last Day, the angels, the books (of Allaah), and the prophets, ...»¹

Anyone who does not believe in every single one of these pillars is not a true believer. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَمَنْ يَكْفُرْ بِاللَّهِ وَمَلَائِكَتِهِ وَكُتُبِهِ وَرُسُلِهِ وَالْيَوْمِ
الْآخِرِ فَقَدْ ضَلَّ ضَلَالًا بَعِيدًا﴾ النساء ١٣٦

«Anyone who does not believe in Allaah, His angels, His books, His messengers, or the Last Day, is surely greatly misguided.»²

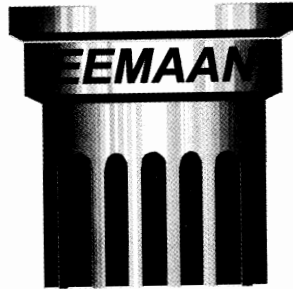
5

Importance of Believing in the Last Day

Belief in *al-Yawm ul-Aakhir* (the Last Day) is one of the six pillars of *Eemaan* (faith).

In the above *aayaat*, we realize the importance of believing in the Last Day when we see that Allaah (ﷻ) mentions it together with the belief in Him.

The Last Day is mentioned and discussed in almost every *soorah* (chapter) of the Qur'aan. The discussions are presented in



1 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:177.

2 Soorat an-Nisaa' 4:136

various ways — by proof and evidence, by example and demonstration, and by description of various events and scenes.

Correct understanding and belief in the Last Day is important and beneficial to us for the following reasons:

1. It strengthens our belief in Allaah's (ﷻ) knowledge, wisdom, and justice. It makes us understand that Allaah (ﷻ) did not create the world aimlessly — rather, He created it for a great wisdom that will become even more clear in the next life.
2. It encourages us to act righteously in order to deserve the Last Day's rewards and avoid its punishment.
3. It helps us understand the reason for our existence, the ultimate goal that we should seriously pursue, and the final destination of Allaah's creation. This gives our life importance and purpose, and enables us to live happily by being focused on a clear goal.
4. It clarifies to us wrong beliefs about the Last Day held by non-Muslims: They either totally deny it and think that death turns them permanently to dirt, or they have misconceptions about it that belittle Allaah's wisdom and justice.

Names of the Last Day

The Last Day is not a normal day comparable to this life's days. Rather, it is extremely long, starting with total destruction of the universe, then rebuilding it and resurrecting the dead, then assembling and judging the creation over a period of many thousand years, then the eternal life in *Jannah* or in Hell.

In the Qur'aan, Allaah (ﷻ) gives many names to the Last Day. Each one of these names describes a situation or event that will occur during it. In the following table, we list and explain some of these names. Following the table, we cite some *aaayaat* in

which these names are mentioned.

#	Name	Meaning	Events
1	<i>Al-Aakhirah</i> or <i>al-Yawm</i> <i>ul-Aakhir</i>	Last Life or Last Day	The life that follows our current life.
2	<i>Yawm ul-</i> <i>Ba'th</i>	The Day of Resurrection	Allaah will bring the people back to life.
3	<i>Yawm ul-</i> <i>Qiyaamah</i>	The Day of Rising or Standing	The people will rise from their graves, and will also stand before Allaah (ﷻ).
4	<i>As-Saa'ah</i>	The (Last) Hour	On the Last Hour, Allaah (ﷻ) will destroy the whole world and will then recreate it differently for the next life.
5	<i>Yawm ul-</i> <i>Hisaab</i>	The Day of Reckoning	Everyone will have to account for what he did in this life.
6	<i>Yawm ud-</i> <i>Deen</i>	The Day of Judgment	Allaah (ﷻ) will judge all people for what they did.

1. ﴿ نَحْنُ أَوْلِيَآؤُكُمْ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ. ﴾ فصلت ٣١
«We are your protectors (O righteous believers)
in the worldly life, as well as in the Hereafter.»¹
2. ﴿ وَقَالَ الَّذِينَ أُوتُوا الْعِلْمَ وَالْإِيمَانَ لَقَدْ لَبِثْتُمْ فِي كِتَابِ اللَّهِ إِلَى يَوْمِ
الْبَعْثِ، فَهَذَا يَوْمُ الْبَعْثِ وَلَكِنَّكُمْ كُنْتُمْ لَا تَعْلَمُونَ ﴿٥٦﴾ الروم ٥٦
«But those who were given the knowledge and
faith will say, "Indeed, you have stayed (in your
graves), according to Allaah's decree, until

1 Soorat Fussilat 41:30-32.

Resurrection Day. This, then, is Resurrection Day, but you did not know.»¹

3. «وَيَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ تَرَى الَّذِينَ كَذَبُوا عَلَى اللَّهِ وُجُوهُهُم مُّسْوَدَّةٌ،

أَلَيْسَ فِي جَهَنَّمَ مَثْوًى لِّلْمُتَكَبِّرِينَ؟ ﴿الزمر ٦٠﴾

«On the Day of Qiyaamah, you will see those who lied about Allaah (by worshiping others besides Him) with their faces blackened. Is there not in Hell a residence for the arrogant?»²

4. «يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ اتَّقُوا رَبَّكُمُ إِنَّ زَلْزَلَةَ السَّاعَةِ شَيْءٌ عَظِيمٌ ﴿الحج ١﴾

«O people! Fear and obey your Lord. Indeed, the eruption of the Final Hour is a terrible thing.»³

5. «وَقَالَ مُوسَى: "إِنِّي عُدْتُ بِرَبِّي وَرَبِّكُمْ مِّنْ كُلِّ مُتَكَبِّرٍ

لَا يُؤْمِنُ بِيَوْمِ الْحِسَابِ." ﴿غافر ٢٧﴾

«Moosaa said, "Indeed, I take refuge (protection) with my Lord and your Lord from every tyrant who does not believe in the Day of Account!"»⁴

6. «مَلِكِ يَوْمِ الدِّينِ ﴿الفاتحة ٤﴾

«(Allaah is) the only Owner and ruling Judge of the Day of Judgment.»⁵

Among the Last Day's many names in the Qur'aan are: *Yawm ul-Khurooj* (the Day of Exiting from the Graves), *Yawm ul-Hashr*

1 Soorat ar-Room 30:56.

2 Soorat az-Zumar 39:60.

3 Soorat al-Hajj 22:1.

4 Soorat Ghaafir 40:27.

5 Soorat al-Faatihah 1:4.

(the Day of Assembly), *Yawm ul-Fasl* (the Day of Resolution), *Yawm ul-Hasrah* (the Day of Regret), *Yawm ul-Khulood* (the Day of Eternity), *al-Qaari'ah* (the Striking Calamity), *as-Saakhkhah* (the Deafening Blow), *al-Ghaashiyah* (the Overpowering Event), *at-Taammat ul-Kubraa* (the Major Overwhelming Calamity), *al-Waaqi'ah* (the Major Event), *al-Haaqqah* (the Sure Truth), and so on.

Purpose of the Creation

Allaah (ﷻ) tells us in the Qur'aan that He did not create the world without an important purpose. Rather, He created it for a great goal and purpose.

Allaah (ﷻ) created us, favored us with many talents and abilities, and allowed us access to numerous resources in the land, sea, and space. He made us masters of the earth and all that is in it. Could He have done all of this for no reason? If you came across a powerful and magnificent machine and asked its engineer why he built it, do you think he will say, "For no reason at all!" Such a wasteful action cannot to be expected even from a foolish person. How could it then be attributed to Allaah the All-Wise? Exalted is He. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿أَفَحَسِبْتُمْ أَنَّمَا خَلَقْنَاكُمْ عَبَثًا وَأَنَّكُمْ إِلَيْنَا لَا تُرْجَعُونَ؟﴾ فَتَعَلَىٰ اللَّهُ
الْمَلِكُ الْحَقُّ لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ رَبُّ الْعَرْشِ الْكَرِيمِ ﴿المؤمنون 115-116﴾

«Did you then think that We created you pointlessly and that you will not be brought back to Us (for account)? Exalted is Allaah, the True Sovereign! There is no (true) god but Him, the Lord of the Noble Throne.»¹

1 Soorat al-Mu'minoon 23:115-116.

When Will the Last Day Come?

Allaah (ﷻ) did not reveal to anyone the time of the Last Day — not even to His messengers or close angels. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِلَيْهِ يُرَدُّ عِلْمُ السَّاعَةِ﴾ فصلت ٤٧

«To Him belongs the knowledge of the Hour.» ¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ السَّاعَةِ: "أَيَّانَ مُرْسَلُهَا؟" قُلْ: "إِنَّمَا عِلْمُهَا عِنْدَ رَبِّي، لَا يُجَلِّيهَا لَوْ قَتَيْتَهَا إِلَّا هُوَ، ثَقُلَتْ فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَالْأَرْضِ، لَا تَأْتِيكُمْ إِلَّا بَغْتَةً." يَسْأَلُونَكَ كَأَنَّكَ حَفِيٌّ عَنْهَا، قُلْ: "إِنَّمَا عِلْمُهَا عِنْدَ اللَّهِ،

وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَ النَّاسِ لَا يَعْلَمُونَ."﴾ الأعراف ١٨٧

«They ask you (O Muhammad) about the Hour: when is its arrival? Say, "This knowledge is only with my Lord. None will reveal its time except Him. Its burden is heavy upon the heavens and the earth. It will not come to you except suddenly." They ask you as if you are familiar with it. Say, "This knowledge is only with Allaah; but most of the people do not know."» ²

Events of the Last Day

In the remaining chapters of this book, we discuss the various events of the Last Day according to the sequence depicted in the

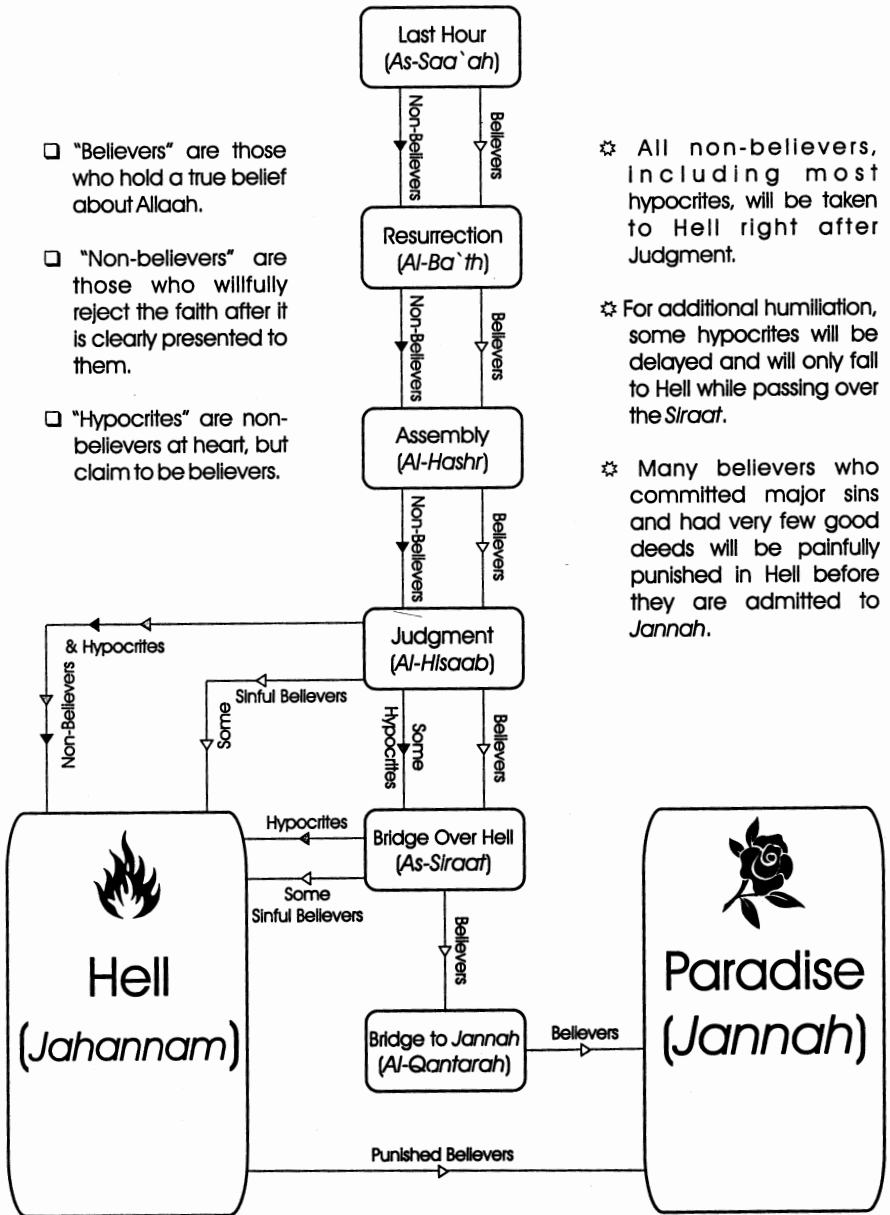
1 Soorat Fussilat 41:47.

2 Soorat al-A'raaf 7:187.

following diagram:

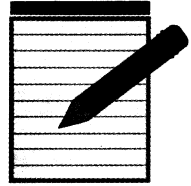
- "Believers" are those who hold a true belief about Allaah.
- "Non-believers" are those who willfully reject the faith after it is clearly presented to them.
- "Hypocrites" are non-believers at heart, but claim to be believers.

- ✧ All non-believers, including most hypocrites, will be taken to Hell right after Judgment.
- ✧ For additional humiliation, some hypocrites will be delayed and will only fall to Hell while passing over the *Siraat*.
- ✧ Many believers who committed major sins and had very few good deeds will be painfully punished in Hell before they are admitted to *Jannah*.



SEQUENCE OF MAJOR EVENTS DURING JUDGMENT DAY

Questions and Exercises



1. In the following table, check all true statements
(16 points):

	Statement	✓
a	Belief in the Last Day strengthens our belief in Allaah.	
b	Belief in the Last Day makes it difficult to understand the reason for our existence.	
c	Belief in the Last Day does not tell us much about the final destination of the creation.	
d	Most <i>soorahs</i> of the Qur'aan do not discuss the Last Day.	
e	The Last Day is presented in the Qur'aan with proofs, examples, and description.	
f	The pagan Arabs had correct beliefs about the Last Day.	
g	The non-Muslims have misconceptions about the Last Day.	
h	Allaah (ﷻ) did not create this world pointlessly.	
i	Belief in the Last Day should not affect our behavior in this life.	
j	Having a purpose in life makes a person happy.	
k	A wise person would not waste his time in useless matters.	
l	Belief in the Last Day is one of the Pillars of Faith.	
m	The Last Day will be a short Day.	
n	No believer will ever enter Hell.	

	Statement	✓
o	The hypocrites are non-believers.	
p	Some hypocrites will fall off the <i>Siraat</i> into Hell.	

2. In the following table, check all pillars of faith that are mentioned in each of the three *aayaat* (6 points):

<i>Aayah</i>	Pillar of Faith					
	1	2	3	4	5	6
<i>Al-Baqarah</i> 2:177						
<i>Al-Baqarah</i> 2:285						
<i>An-Nisaa'</i> 4:136						

3. Mention and discuss four important benefits of believing in the Last Day (12 points):

1	
2	
3	
4	

4. Mention and briefly explain six names of the Last Day (12 points):

1
2
3
4
5
6

5. Describe seven main events of the Last Day (7 points):

1
2
3
4
5
6
7

6. Who besides Allaah knows the time of the Hour? (Put a ✓ next to any right answer; 2 points)

<input type="checkbox"/>	Muhammad (ﷺ)
--------------------------	--------------

<input type="checkbox"/>	Jibreel (جبرائيل)
--------------------------	-------------------

<input type="checkbox"/>	All prophets
--------------------------	--------------

<input type="checkbox"/>	No one
--------------------------	--------

7. Mention and explain four of the Last Day's additional names that we listed on page 5 (8 points):

1	
2	
3	
4	

CHAPTER 2

RESURRECTION & ASSEMBLY

The Day of Doom

The Last Day begins with total destruction of this world. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَلَا تَدْعُ مَعَ اللَّهِ إِلَهًا آخَرَ، لَا إِلَهَ إِلَّا هُوَ، كُلُّ شَيْءٍ هَالِكٌ إِلَّا وَجْهَهُ، لَهُ الْحُكْمُ وَإِلَيْهِ تُرْجَعُونَ ﴿٨٨﴾ القصص ٨٨

«Do not invoke other gods besides Allaah. There is no (true) god except Him. Everything will perish except His Face (i.e. except Him). To Him belongs the Judgment, and to Him will you be returned.»¹

DEATH OF ALL CREATED BEINGS

The destruction will start when an angel blows a horn by Allaah's (ﷻ) command, causing global death. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَنُفِخَ فِي الصُّورِ، فَصَعِقَ مَنْ فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَمَنْ فِي الْأَرْضِ، إِلَّا مَنْ شَاءَ اللَّهُ. ﴿٦٨﴾ الزمر ٦٨

«The Horn will be blown. Whoever is in the heavens or on earth will then fall dead, except those whom Allaah will spare.»²

1 Soorat al-Qasas 28:88.

2 Soorat az-Zumar 39:68.

We are not told who are those that Allaah (ﷻ) will spare from that major death following the Horn's blow. Some scholars believe that they include some angels, such as the Blower of the Horn, and some of the inhabitants of *Jannah*. Allaah knows best.

Aboo Sa'eed al-Khudree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«كَيْفَ أَنْعَمُ وَقَدْ أَلْتَقَمَ صَاحِبُ الْقَرْنِ الْقَرْنَ، وَحَنَى جَبْهَتَهُ،
وَأَصْغَى سَمْعَهُ، يَنْتَظِرُ أَنْ يُؤْمَرَ أَنْ يَنْفُخَ فَيَنْفُخُ.»¹

«How can I feel secure when the Holder of the Horn has placed the Horn against his lips and has bent his forehead. He listens carefully, awaiting the command to blow so as to blow it.»¹

This teaches us that we must not feel too secure either. Rather, we should always be obedient to Allaah and prepared for this blow that may happen during our lifetime.

DESTRUCTION OF THE UNIVERSE

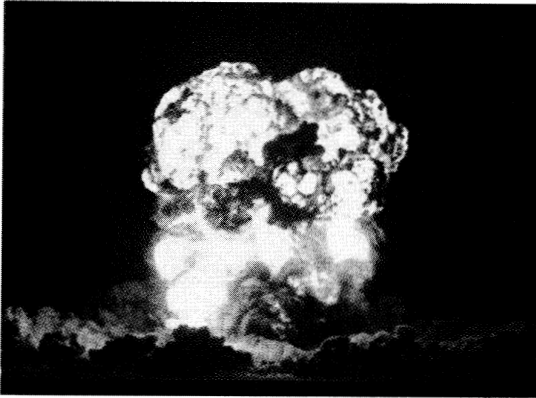
After this blow, the earth will be flattened, the mountains will be turned into floating sand dunes, and major changes will take place in the whole universe. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَيَسْأَلُونَكَ عَنِ الْجِبَالِ، فَقُلْ: "يَنْسِفُهَا رَبِّي نَسْفًا ۖ فَيَذَرُهَا قَاعًا صَفْصَفًا ۖ لَا تَرَى فِيهَا عِوَجًا وَلَا أَمْتًا."»² طه ١٠٥-١٠٧

«They ask you about the mountains. Say, "My Lord will blow them away with a blast, leaving it (the earth) a flat plane, so that you will see in it no dents or rises (i.e. valleys or mountains).»²

1 Recorded by Ahmad, at-Tirmitheh, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 1079).

2 *Taahaa* 20:105-107.



And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِذَا الشَّمْسُ كُوِّرَتْ ﴿١﴾ وَإِذَا النُّجُومُ انْكَدَرَتْ ﴿٢﴾ وَإِذَا الْجِبَالُ
سُيِّرَتْ ﴿٣﴾ وَإِذَا الْعِشَارُ عُطِّلَتْ ﴿٤﴾ وَإِذَا الْوُحُوشُ حُشِرَتْ ﴿٥﴾
وَإِذَا الْبِحَارُ سُجِّرَتْ ﴿٦﴾ وَإِذَا النُّفُوسُ زُوِّجَتْ ﴿٧﴾ وَإِذَا الْمَوْءُودَةُ
سُئِلَتْ ﴿٨﴾ بِأَيِّ ذَنْبٍ قُتِلَتْ ﴿٩﴾ وَإِذَا الصُّحُفُ نُشِرَتْ ﴿١٠﴾ وَإِذَا
السَّمَاءُ كُشِطَتْ ﴿١١﴾ وَإِذَا الْجَحِيمُ سُعِّرَتْ ﴿١٢﴾ وَإِذَا الْجَنَّةُ
أُزْلِفَتْ ﴿١٣﴾ عَلِمَتْ نَفْسٌ مَّا أَحْضَرَتْ ﴿١٤﴾﴾ التَّكْوِيرِ ١-١٤

«When the sun will be shrouded in darkness, when the stars will be extinguished, when the mountains will be made to vanish, when the pregnant she-camels will be left untended, when the beasts will be crowded together (in terror), when the seas will be set on fire, when the souls will be coupled ¹, when the girl who was buried alive will question the crime for which she was killed, when the scrolls (of records) will be unfolded, when the sky will be stripped away,

1 This means that every person will be joined with his record of deeds. It also means that the people, whether good or bad, will be joined with people like them.

when the Hellfire will be set ablaze, and when *Jannah* will be brought into view: Every soul will then come to know what it has done.»¹

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِذَا السَّمَاءُ أَنْفَطَرَتْ ﴿۱﴾ وَإِذَا الْكُوَاكِبُ انْتَثَرَتْ ﴿۲﴾ وَإِذَا الْبِحَارُ فُجِّرَتْ ﴿۳﴾
وَإِذَا الْقُبُورُ بُعْثِرَتْ ﴿۴﴾ عَلِمَتْ نَفْسٌ مَّا قَدَّمَتْ وَأَخَّرَتْ ﴿۵﴾﴾ الانفطار ١-٥

«When the sky will break down, when the stars will scatter, when the seas will be exploded, and when the graves will overturn (to release their contents) — every soul will then know what it has put forth or held back.»²

These events will be far greater than any catastrophes we have ever witnessed or viewed on television, such as earthquakes, volcanoes, tornadoes, or hurricanes. The smaller catastrophes that we see should remind us of the major one that is yet to come, and should move us to fear and obey Allaah (ﷻ) who is in control of everything.

Recreation

THE WORLD'S RECREATION

Following the destruction of the universe and its inhabitants, Allaah (ﷻ) will replace the earth and heavens with new ones. He (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوْمَ تُبَدَّلُ الْأَرْضُ غَيْرَ الْأَرْضِ وَالسَّمَوَاتُ
وَبَرَزُوا لِلَّهِ الْوَاحِدِ الْقَهَّارِ ﴿۱﴾﴾ إبراهيم ٤٨

1 Soorat at-Takweer 81:1-14.

2 Soorat al-Infitaar 82:1-5.

«(Judgment will be) on the Day when the earth will be replaced by a different earth, and the heavens as well, and they (the people) will come out before Allaah, the One, the Prevailing.» ¹

The earth that we know will be replaced by another one that is extremely wide, totally flat, and has no landmarks. Sahl Bin Sa'd (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يُحْشَرُ النَّاسُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ عَلَى أَرْضٍ بَيْضَاءَ عَفْرَاءَ،
كَقُرْصَةِ النَّقِيِّ، لَيْسَ فِيهَا مَعْلَمٌ لِأَحَدٍ.»

«During Resurrection Day, the people will be assembled upon a yellowish-white land, like a white-flour dough, without any landmarks.» ²

THE RESURRECTION

After the earth's destruction and recreation, will the people's bodies be transported to the new earth or will they be recreated from scratch? We have no knowledge of this, but we know that it is all within the power of the One who created us the first time.

A while after the first blow, the Horn will be blown again, and all people will rise from death. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَنُفِخَ فِي الصُّورِ فَصَعِقَ مَنْ فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَمَنْ فِي الْأَرْضِ، إِلَّا مَنْ شَاءَ اللَّهُ، ثُمَّ نُفِخَ فِيهِ أُخْرَىٰ فَإِذَا هُمْ قِيَامٌ يَنْظُرُونَ ﴿٦٨﴾ الزمر ٦٨»

«And the Horn will be blown. All who are in the heavens and on earth will fall dead, except those whom Allaah will spare. Then it will be blown

1 Soorat Ibraaheem 14:48.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

again, and at once they will all be standing and looking around them.»¹

The second blow will be forty long periods after the first one. We are not told what is the length of these forty periods. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ما بين النفختين أربعون. ثُمَّ يُنَزَّلُ اللَّهُ مِنَ السَّمَاءِ مَاءً، فَيَنْبُتُونَ كَمَا يَنْبُتُ الْبَقْلُ.»

«Between the two blows, there will be forty (eras of time). Allaah will then send down rain from the sky, and they (the people) will grow like vegetation.»²



This rain will be like light dew. Ibn 'Umar (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يُنْفَخُ فِي الصُّورِ فَيُصْعَقُ النَّاسُ. ثُمَّ يُرْسِلُ اللَّهُ مَطْرًا كَأَنَّهُ طَلٌّ فَتَنْبُتُ مِنْهُ أَجْسَادُ النَّاسِ، ثُمَّ يُنْفَخُ فِيهِ أُخْرَى فَإِذَا هُمْ قِيَامٌ يَنْظُرُونَ.»

«The Horn will be blown, and all people will die. Allaah will then send down rain like dew causing the people's bodies to grow. It will then be blown again, and they will rise and look around.»³

The people's recreation will start from their tail-bone. These tiny bones will act like seeds, and we will all sprout from them like plants sprout from their seeds. How different this will be from the way we were first created! This tells us of Allaah's

1 Soorat az-Zumar 39:68.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

3 Recorded by Muslim.

great power and wisdom. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«كُلُّ أبنِ آدَمَ يَأْكُلُهُ التُّرَابُ إِلَّا عَجَبَ الذَّنْبِ، مِنْهُ خُلِقَ، وَمِنْهُ يُرَكَّبُ.»

«The soil eats away all parts of a human being — except for the tail-bone. From this bone he was first created, and from it he will be refashioned.»¹

Allaah (ﷻ) will resurrect every human being, whether he was of the ancient or modern people, whether he died young or old, and whether he was buried in his grave or was eaten by fish in the sea or beasts in the jungle. Allaah will not forget or neglect anyone. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



﴿أَيْنَمَا تَكُونُوا يَأْتِ بِكُمْ اللَّهُ جَمِيعًا، إِنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ﴾ البقرة ١٤٨

«Wherever you may be, Allaah will bring you forth all together. Indeed, Allaah is capable of doing everything.»²

The dead people will be raised from their graves in their original shape and bodies, and life will be restored to them. This is called "Resurrection". Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿لَا أُقْسِمُ بِيَوْمِ الْقِيَامَةِ ۖ وَلَا أُقْسِمُ بِالنَّفْسِ اللَّوَّامَةِ ۖ أَيَحْسَبُ الْإِنْسَانُ ۖ أَلَّنْ نَجْمَعَ عِظَامَهُ ۖ بَلَىٰ قَدَرِينَ عَلَىٰ أَنْ نُسَوِّيَ بَنَانَهُ﴾ القيامة ١-٤

«I swear by Resurrection Day, and I swear by the

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:148.

reproaching soul¹. Does the human being think that We cannot assemble his bones? Yes indeed — We are able even to form his fingertips.»²

Some scholars believe that the significance of mentioning fingertips here is because of the uniqueness of people's fingerprints. Others believe that it has to do with the complex structure and numerous bones that make up the fingers. Allaah knows best.



And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿أَيَحْسَبُ الْإِنْسَانُ أَنْ يُتْرَكَ سُدًى؟ أَلَمْ يَكْ نُطْفَعًا مِنْ مَنِيٍّ يُمْنَىٰ ۖ ثُمَّ كَانَ عَلَقَةً فَخَلَقَ فَسَوَّىٰ ۖ فَجَعَلَ مِنَ الذَّرِّ لَرًّا وَالْأُنثَىٰ؟ أَلَيْسَ ذَلِكَ بِقَادِرٍ عَلَىٰ أَنْ يُحْيِيَ الْمَوْتَىٰ؟﴾ القيامة ٣٦-٤٠

«Does the human being think that he will be left in vain (without reckoning)? Was he not merely a discharged drop of sperm? Then he became a clot, created and shaped by Allaah in due proportion? And He made out of it the two sexes, male and female? Is not He, then, able to give life to the dead?»³

The first human to emerge from his grave will be our Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ). Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أنا سيد ولدِ آدم يوم القيامة، وأول من ينشق

1 This refers to a believer's soul that keeps reproaching him for sinning or insufficient worship.

2 Soorat al-Qiyaamah 75:1-4.

3 Soorat al-Qiyaamah 75:36-40.

« عنه القبرُ، وأول شافعٍ، وأول مُشَفِّعٍ. »

«I will be the chief of the children of Aadam on the Day of Resurrection. And I will be the first for whom the grave will open, and the first to intercede, and the first whose intercession will be accepted.»¹

Upon resurrection, the disbelievers will be alarmed and terrified. They will realize that their denial of Resurrection will now be held against them, leading them to the torment of Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَنُفِّخَ فِي الصُّورِ، فَإِذَا هُمْ مِنَ الْأَجْدَاثِ إِلَىٰ رَبِّهِمْ يَنْسِلُونَ ﴿٥١﴾
 قَالُوا: "يَوَيْلَنَا، مَنْ بَعَثَنَا مِنْ مَرْقَدِنَا؟" هَذَا مَا وَعَدَ الرَّحْمَنُ،
 وَصَدَقَ الْمُرْسَلُونَ. ﴿٥٢﴾»

«The Horn will be blown, and they will all rush out from their graves to their Lord. They will say, "O woe to us! Who has raised us up from our sleep (of death)? They will be told, "This is what the Most Merciful had promised, and the messengers told the truth."»²

Allaah Exhibits His Power

As soon as the creatures are resurrected, they will experience a great terror caused by the anxiety of what will happen to them. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَيَوْمَ يُنْفَخُ فِي الصُّورِ فَفَزِعَ مَنْ فِي السَّمَوَاتِ وَمَنْ فِي

1 This hadeeth was recorded by Muslim and Aboo Daawood.

2 Soorat Yaaseen 36:51-52..

الْأَرْضِ إِلَّا مَنْ شَاءَ اللَّهُ، وَكُلُّ أَتَوْهُ دَاخِرِينَ ﴿٨٧﴾ النمل ٨٧

«And (tell them) of the Day when the Horn will be sounded. Everyone in the heavens and on earth will then be struck with terror, except for those that Allaah wills (to spare), and all of them will come to Him with total submission.» ¹

This terror will be enhanced by Allaah's (ﷻ) great show of power and dominance. He will hold the earth in His grip and will fold the heavens in His hand ²:

﴿وَالْأَرْضُ جَمِيعًا قَبْضَتُهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ، وَالسَّمَاوَاتُ

مَطْوِيَّاتٌ بِيَمِينِهِ.﴾ الزمر ٦٧

«The entire earth will be in His grip on the Day of Resurrection, and the heavens will be folded in His right hand.» ³

Abou Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يَقْبِضُ اللَّهُ الْأَرْضَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ، وَيَطْوِي السَّمَاءَ بِيَمِينِهِ، ثُمَّ يَقُولُ:
«أَنَا الْمَلِكُ. أَيْنَ مُلُوكُ الْأَرْضِ؟ أَيْنَ الْجَبَّارُونَ؟ أَيْنَ الْمُتَكَبِّرُونَ؟»»

«On Resurrection Day, Allaah will hold the earth in His fist, and will fold the heavens in His right hand. He will then say, "I am the King. Where are the kings of earth? Where are the tyrants? Where are the arrogant?"» ⁴

1 Soorat an-Naml 27:87.

2 These qualities of Allaah must be accepted without likening Him to His creation or visualizing the manner in which He does His actions. This is explained in detail in the first book of this series: "Knowing Allaah".

3 Soorat az-Zumar 39:67.

4 This hadeeth was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

We will see below that the believers' fear will quickly subside and will be replaced by a feeling of security.

The Great Assembly

NO ESCAPE, NO EXEMPTION

After rising from the grave, every human, without exception, will then be assembled in preparation for the Final Judgment. A call will be sounded, and all people will immediately start moving quietly to the place of Assembly (*Hashr*). Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوْمَئِذٍ يَتَّبِعُونَ الدَّاعِيَ لَا عِوَجَ لَهُ، وَخَشَعَتِ الْأَصْوَاتُ لِلرَّحْمَنِ، فَلَا تَسْمَعُ إِلَّا هَمْسًا ﴿١٠٨﴾ يَوْمَئِذٍ لَا تَنْفَعُ الشَّفَاعَةُ إِلَّا مَنْ أَذِنَ لَهُ الرَّحْمَنُ وَرَضِيَ لَهُ قَوْلًا ﴿١٠٩﴾ يَعْلَمُ مَا بَيْنَ أَيْدِيهِمْ وَمَا خَلْفَهُمْ، وَلَا يُحِيطُونَ بِهِ عِلْمًا ﴿١١٠﴾ وَعَنْتِ الْأَوْجُوهُ لِلْحَيِّ الْقَيُّومِ، وَقَدْ خَابَ مَنْ حَمَلَ ظُلْمًا ﴿١١١﴾﴾ طه ١٠٨-١١١

«On that Day, all will follow the summoning voice from which there will be no escape, and all sounds will be hushed before the Merciful, so you will hear nothing but a faint whisper (of footsteps).

On that Day, intercession will avail no one except him to whom the Merciful will have granted permission and will have accepted his word — for He knows all that is before them (i.e., what they did) and is behind them (i.e., what they neglected), whereas they cannot encompass that with their knowledge.

(On that Day,) all faces will be humbled before the Ever-Living, the Sustainer of All, and

in loss will be he who will have a burden of wrongdoing.»¹

None will be neglected or exempted from this enormous march. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَيَوْمَ نُسَيِّرُ الْجِبَالَ، وَتَرَى الْأَرْضَ بَارِزَةً، وَحَشَرْنَاهُمْ
فَلَمْ نُعَادِرْ مِنْهُمْ أَحَدًا﴾ الكهف ٤٧

«And (warn of) the Day when We will cause the mountains to disappear, and you will see the earth void and bare, and We will assemble them, leaving out none of them.»²

THE PEOPLE WILL FIRST BE ASSEMBLED NAKED

When the people are first raised from their graves, they will be given the same garments that they wore at death. Aboo Sa'eed al-Khudree (رضي الله عنه) reported that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) said:

﴿إِنَّ الْمَيِّتَ يُبْعَثُ فِي ثِيَابِهِ الَّتِي يَمُوتُ فِيهَا.﴾

«A dead person will be resurrected in the clothes in which he died.»³

However, these clothes will later be removed from us when we are all gathered in preparation for the Judgment, so that we will be assembled naked, uncircumcised, and barefoot. 'Aa'ishah (رضي الله عنها) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) told her:

﴿يُحْشَرُ النَّاسُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ حُفَاءَ عُرَاءَ غُرْلًا.﴾

1 Taahaa 20:108-111.

2 Soorat al-Kahf 18:47.

3 Recorded by Aboo Daawood, Ibn Hibbaan, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 1671).

«On Resurrection Day, the people will be gathered barefoot, naked, and uncircumcised.»

When she heard this, 'Aa'ishah was disturbed and asked, "يا رسول الله! الرجال والنساء جميعاً، ينظرُ بعضهم إلى بعض؟" "O Allaah's Messenger, will the men and women be together, looking at one another?" He (ﷺ) replied:

«يا عائشة! الأمرُ أشدُّ من أن ينظرَ بعضهم إلى بعض.»

«O 'Aa'ishah, the situation will be too serious for them to care to look at each other!»¹

Later during that Day, the believers will be clothed, starting with Ibraaheem (ﷺ). Ibn 'Abbaas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

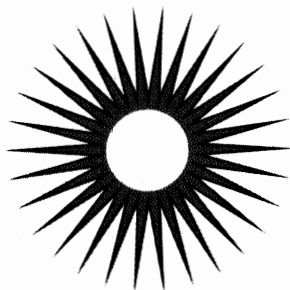
«أولُ من يُكسى يومَ القيامةِ إبراهيمُ.»

«The first person who will be clothed on Resurrection Day is Ibraaheem.»²

This, possibly, will be a reward for Ibraaheem (رضي الله عنه) because his people stripped him to burn him.

THE SUN'S APPROACH

Adding to the severity of the situation, the sun will be brought very close to the people, causing them to be soaked in their sweat. Al-Muqdaad (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:



«تدنى الشمسُ يومَ القيامةِ من الخلقِ حتى تكونَ منهم كمقدارٍ»

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

ميل، فيكونُ الناسُ على قدرِ أعمالِهِم في العَرَقِ، فمنهم من يكونُ إلى كعبيه، ومنهم من يكونُ إلى رُكبتيه، ومنهم من يكونُ إلى حَقْوِيهِ، ومنهم من يُلجِمُهُ العَرَقُ إِبْجَاماً (إلى فيه).»

«On Resurrection Day, the sun will be brought as close to the creation as a mile's distance. This will cause the people to be soaked in sweat according to their deeds. For some of them, the sweat will be up to their heels, for others up to their knees, for others up to their pelvic bone, and for others up to their mouth.»¹

In this life, the sun is millions of miles away from us. Yet, it can easily cause burns and death during a hot summer day. Imagine, then, the situation when it is right above our heads and we have no way of getting shelter — except with our deeds. The discomfort of the wicked will then be beyond description, and their discomfort will last for many long years! May Allaah (ﷻ) shelter us from this.

DURATION OF THE ASSEMBLY

The Last Day, which includes Resurrection, Assembly, and Judgment, will be extremely long by this world's standards. It will be as long as fifty thousand years! Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«تَعْرُجُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ وَالرُّوحُ إِلَيْهِ فِي يَوْمٍ كَانَ مِقْدَارُهُ
خَمْسِينَ أَلْفَ سَنَةٍ ﴿٥٠﴾ المَعَارِجُ ٤

«The angels and the Spirit (Jibreel) will ascend to Him during a Day whose extent is fifty thousand

1 Recorded by Muslim and at-Tirmidhi.

years.»¹

Ibn 'Abbaas (رضي الله عنه) commented on this *aayah* saying, "This refers to Resurrection Day. Allaah will make it fifty thousand years long for the disbelievers."²

The Last Day will not appear as long for the believers. Rather, it will appear quite short. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that once the Prophet (ﷺ) recited the *aayah*:

﴿يَوْمَ يَقُومُ النَّاسُ لِرَبِّ الْعَالَمِينَ﴾ المطففين ٦

«(It is a tremendous Day,) the Day when the people will stand before the Lord of the worlds.»³

The Prophet (ﷺ) then explained:

«مقدار نصف يوم من خمسين ألف سنة، فيهون ذلك على المؤمن كتدلي الشمس للغروب إلى أن تغرب.»

«This standing will be for the duration of half of the fifty-thousand-years Day. But this will be made easy for a believer, seeming like the duration from when the sun declines for setting until it finally sets.»⁴

The Believers During Assembly

We saw above that the Assembly Day will appear short for

1 Soorat al-Ma'aarij 70:4.

2 Recorded by Ibn Katheer in his *Tafseer*.

3 Soorat al-Mutaffifeen 83:6.

4 Recorded by Aboo Ya'laa and Ibn Hibbaan. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ut-Targheeb wat-Tarheeb* no. 3589).

believers. In addition, the believers will receive many privileges that will relieve them from the hardships of the Day. In this section, we discuss a few of these privileges.

THEY WILL BE SECURE FROM THE MAJOR FEAR

The Day of Resurrection carries in its folds the best tidings for some people and the worst for others. This, in addition to many other events of that Day, brings terror to the hearts of the most courageous. However, the righteous people who fall under Allaah's promise of forgiveness will be secure from this great terror. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ سَبَقَتْ لَهُمْ مِنَّا الْحُسْنَىٰ، أُولَٰئِكَ عَنْهَا مُبْعَدُونَ ﴿١٠١﴾
 لَا يَسْمَعُونَ حَسِيسَهَا، وَهُمْ فِي مَا شَاءَتْ أَنفُسُهُمْ خَالِدُونَ ﴿١٠٢﴾
 لَا يَحْزَنُهُمُ الْفَزَعُ الْأَكْبَرُ، وَتَتَلَقَّاهُمُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ: "هَذَا يَوْمُكُمْ
 الَّذِي كُنْتُمْ تُوعَدُونَ." ﴿١٠٣﴾﴾

« Indeed, as for those for whom the decree of ultimate good has preceded from Us — they will be kept far away from it (i.e. Hell). They will not hear its hissing sound, while they will abide eternally in all that their souls desire. They will not be grieved by the Greatest Terror, and the angels will receive them with the greeting, "This is your Day that you have been promised."»¹

THEY WILL BE SHELTERED UNDER ALLAAH'S THRONE

During Assembly and Judgment, the righteous will find shelter from the heat under Allaah's Throne. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

1 Soorat al-Anbiyaa' 21:101-103.

«سبعة يظلهم الله في ظله يوم لا ظل إلا ظله: إمام عادل، وشاب نشأ في عبادة الله، ورجل قلبه معلق بالمساجد، ورجلان تحابا في الله أجمعاه عليه وتفرقا عليه، ورجل دعته امرأة ذات منصب وجمال فقال: «إني أخاف الله»، ورجل تصدق بصدقة فأخفاها، حتى لا تعلم شماله ما تنفق يمينه، ورجل ذكر الله خالياً ففاضت عيناه.»

«There are seven types of people that Allaah (ﷻ) will shelter in the shade of His Throne during the Day when there will be no other shelter: ⁽¹⁾ a just leader, ⁽²⁾ a young man who grew up worshipping Allaah, ⁽³⁾ a man whose heart is attached to the places of *sujood* ¹, ⁽⁴⁾ two men who love each other for Allaah's sake — thus they meet and separate upon this love, ⁽⁵⁾ a man who is invited (to sin) by a woman of influence and beauty but he responds, "Indeed, I fear Allaah," ⁽⁶⁾ a man who gives charity so secretly that his left hand would not know what his right hand spends, ⁽⁷⁾ and a man who mentions Allaah in private and his eyes overflow with tears.» ²

We have two important notes regarding this *hadeeth*:

1. The *hadeeth* mentions various types of righteous "men", but it really means both "men" and "women" who fit those descriptions. Thus, a young woman who grew up worshipping Allaah will be sheltered under the Throne; and so on.

1 This means that he loves prayer and the places where it is performed, such as *masjids*.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

2. A good Muslim can fall under one or more of the above types. But we should always strive to fall under ALL of them: we love to pray to Allaah; we love a friend for Allaah's sake because he is a good Muslim and he helps us to goodness; we sometimes weep out of love, hope, or fear of Allaah; we are generous in giving charity; we (as parents, older siblings, teachers, bosses, etc.) lead those under us justly and righteously; and so on.

Also, Ka'b Bin 'Amr (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«من أَنْظَرَ مُعْسِرًا أَوْ وَضَعَ عَنْهُ أَظْلَهُ اللَّهُ فِي ظِلِّهِ.»

«Whoever defers a financially-burdened person (in settling a debt) or absolves him — Allaah will shelter him under His (Throne's) shade.»¹

THEY WILL FIND RELIEF FROM HARDSHIPS

Believers who are good and kind to other people will be shown kindness and will be granted relief during Resurrection Day. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«من نَفَسَ عَنْ مُؤْمِنٍ كُرْبَةً مِنْ كُرْبِ الدُّنْيَا، نَفَسَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُ كُرْبَةً مِنْ كُرْبِ يَوْمِ الْقِيَامَةِ، وَمَنْ يَسَّرَ عَلَى مُعْسِرٍ، يَسَّرَ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ فِي الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ، وَمَنْ سَتَرَ مُسْلِمًا سَتَرَهُ اللَّهُ فِي الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ، وَاللَّهُ فِي عَوْنِ الْعَبْدِ مَا كَانَ الْعَبْدُ فِي عَوْنِ أَخِيهِ.»

«Whoever relieves a believer from one of this life's hardships, Allaah will relieve him from one of the hardships of Resurrection Day; and whoever assists a person who is in a tight

1 Recorded by Muslim.

financial situation, Allaah will assist him in the first life and the hereafter; and whoever covers ¹ a Muslim, Allaah will cover him in the first life and the hereafter; and Allaah is always at the aid of a person as long as the person is at his brother's aid. › ²

We should strive to help our Muslim brothers and sisters, and remember that a person does not truly believe until he loves for his brother what he loves for himself.

THEIR WOUNDS WILL SMELL LIKE MUSK

Blood has an unpleasant smell that grows stronger over time. On Resurrection Day, however, a wound that resulted from fighting for Allaah's cause will have a special characteristic: it will produce a blood-colored fluid whose pleasant smell will amaze and delight other people.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«والذي نفسي بيده، لا يُكَلِّمُ أَحَدٌ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ، إِلَّا جَاءَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ وَجُرْحُهُ يَشْتَبُ، اللَّوْنُ لَوْنُ الدَّمِ، وَالرَّيْحُ رِيحُ الْمِسْكِ.»

«By the One in whose hand is my soul, whenever a person is wounded for Allaah's sake, he will come on Judgment Day with his wound seeping (a fluid), its color will be the color of blood, and its smell the smell of musk. › ³

-
- 1 Covering a person means guarding his weakness, such as a secret, a sin, or a defect, so that other people will not put him at a disadvantage because of it.
 - 2 Recorded by Muslim.
 - 3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

PLACE OF THE JUST PEOPLE

Those who are just and fair in this life will be granted a very magnificent position in the next life: standing on the right of Allaah, the Most Just. 'Abdullaah Bin 'Umar (رضي الله عنه) reported that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) said:

«إنَّ الْمُقْسِطِينَ عِنْدَ اللَّهِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ عَلَىٰ مَنَابِرَ مِنْ نُورٍ، عَنِ يَمِينِ الرَّحْمَنِ،
وَكَلْتَا يَدَيْهِ يَمِينٍ، الَّذِينَ يَعْدِلُونَ فِي حُكْمِهِمْ وَأَهْلِيهِمْ وَمَا وُكِّلُوا.»

«Indeed, on the Day of Resurrection, Allaah will place the just people on platforms of light. They will be on the right side of ar-Rahmaan — and both of His hands are right hands. Those are the ones who are just in their rule, families, and anything of which they are given charge.»¹

The Sinful During Assembly

Many sinful people, including some believers, will be punished during Assembly Day for sins they committed in this life. Allaah knows whether this will be all the punishment they get, or whether they will be punished further in Hell. In this section, we discuss some forms of punishment for the sinful during Assembly Day.

SHRINKING THE ARROGANT

During Assembly Day, the arrogant and tyrants of this world will be as small as ants, so that other people may step on them — just as they stepped on other



1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by Muslim, Ahmad, and an-Nasaa'ee.

people's rights in this life. 'Abdullaah Bin 'Amr (ﷺ) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يُحْشَرُ الْمُتَكَبِّرُونَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ أَمْثَالَ الذَّرِّ فِي صُورِ الرِّجَالِ، يَغْشَاهُمْ
الذَّلُّ مِنْ كُلِّ مَكَانٍ، يُسَاقُونَ إِلَى سِجْنٍ فِي جَهَنَّمَ يُسَمَّى بُولَسَ،
تَعْلُوهُمْ نَارِ الْأَنْبِيَارِ، يُسْقَوْنَ مِنْ عَصَارَةِ أَهْلِ النَّارِ، طِينَةَ الْحَبَالِ.»

«On Resurrection Day, the arrogant will be assembled in the size of little ants, but in human form. Humility will surround them from every direction. They will (later) be driven to a prison in Hell called Boolas. They will be overwhelmed by the Fire of fires, and will be made to drink from the filthy fluids of the people of Hell.»¹

This tells us that we should be humble with other Muslims and should avoid acting in an arrogant or conceited way.

ENGULFING THE OPPRESSORS IN DARKNESS

The oppressors and unjust people will be engulfed in darkness during Resurrection Day. Jaabir Bin 'Abdillaah and 'Abdullaah Bin 'Umar (ﷺ) reported that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) said:

«اتَّقُوا الظُّلْمَ، فَإِنَّ الظُّلْمَ ظُلْمَاتٌ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ.»

«Avoid oppression, because oppression will result in deep darkness on Resurrection Day.»²

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by Ahmad and at-Tirmithi. It was verified authentic by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ul-Jaami'* no. 8040 and *al-Mishkaat* no. 5039).

2 Recorded by Muslim and others.

FIRE-BRANDING THOSE WHO DO NOT PAY ZAKAAH

When Allaah gives us wealth, we are supposed to use it in what pleases Him, and we should give away a part of it as charity and *zakaah*. Some people, however, do not like to give charity, thinking that charity will reduce their wealth. In fact, their stinginess is what reduces the blessing in their wealth and, in addition, they will be severely punished for it in the hereafter.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

« ما من صاحب ذهب ولا فضة لا يؤدِّي فيها حقَّها إلا إذا كان يومُ
القيامةِ صُفِّحَتْ له صفائحٌ من نارٍ، فأحْمِيَ عليها في نارِ جهنمِ،
فيكوى بها جنبه وجبينه وظهره، كلما بردت أُعيدت عليه، في يومٍ
كان مقداره خمسين ألفَ سنةٍ، حتى يُقضى بين العبادِ، فيرى سبيله،
إمَّا إلى الجنةِ وإمَّا إلى النارِ. »

«If a person who owns gold and silver does not give their due right (of *zakaah*), they will be fashioned on Resurrection Day as plates of fire, which will be heated in the Hellfire and then used to burn his side and forehead and back. Whenever they cool down, they will be reheated and then applied to him, during a Day that will be fifty thousand years long — until Judgment is concluded among the people and he is shown whether his destination is to *Jannah* or to Hell.» ¹

The Prophet (ﷺ) goes on in this *hadeeth* to tell us that other forms of painful punishment will also be applied to people who did not give charity for other forms of wealth, such as camels, cattle, and sheep.

1 Recorded by Muslim and others.

EXPOSING BETRAYAL

There are people agree with a person on something, then turn against him behind his back and break their promise to him. They do this in a secret way that causes great harm. Their betrayal, however, will not remain secret in the hereafter — rather, it will be most obviously exposed to the eyes of all people!

Ibn 'Umar (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِذَا جَمَعَ اللَّهُ الْأَوَّلِينَ وَالْآخِرِينَ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ، يُرْفَعُ لِكُلِّ

غَادِرٍ لُؤَاءٌ، فَقِيلَ: "هَذِهِ غَدْرَةُ فُلَانِ بْنِ فُلَانٍ."»

«On Resurrection Day when Allaah will assemble the first and last of people, a banner will be erected for every betrayer saying, "This is the betrayal of so-and-so, son of so-and so."»¹

PUNISHMENT FOR TAKING BRIBE

When a person is hired to do a job, he is not supposed to make any personal profit from his job (except for the agreed pay). Any profit that he makes should be honestly handed over to his employer. Some people, however, use their jobs for personal gains, like making their clients pay them bribe money before they offer them the required service. This is prohibited in Islaam.

Aboo Hameed as-Saa'idee (رضي الله عنه) reported that once the Prophet (ﷺ) appointed a man to collect the *zakaah*. That man later came to the Prophet (ﷺ), gave him what he collected, and kept some for himself, saying, "That is for you, and this was given to me as a gift." The Prophet (ﷺ) then stood among his companions and gave a *khutbah* (speech) in which he said:

1 Recorded by Muslim.

«ما بالُ العاملِ نبعثُهُ على عملٍ، فيقول: "هذا لكم، وهذا لي؟" أفلا جلسَ في بيتِ أبيه وأمه، فينظرُ أيُّهدى إليه أم لا؟ والذي نفسُ محمدٍ بيده، لا يأتي أحدكم منها بشيءٍ إلا جاء به يومَ القيامةِ على رقبته، إن كان بعيراً له رغاءٌ، أو بقرةً لها خوارٌ، أو شاةً لها ثُواج.»

«Why is it that we appoint a person in a job and he says, "That is for you, and this is for me?" Wouldn't he then remain in the house of his mother and father and then see whether anything will be given to him as gift? By the One in whose hand is Muhammad's soul, none of you who takes any of this (unrightful gifts) but he will come on Resurrection Day with it upon his neck: whether it was a growling camel, a mooing cow, or a bleating goat.»¹

The Disbelievers During Assembly

THEY WILL LOSE ALL HOPE

The punishment of the disbelievers will start well before they enter Hell. They will suffer many forms of physical and mental afflictions. Realizing that there is no way to escape the approaching punishment in Hell, they will lose all hope and fall into despair. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَيَوْمَ تَقُومُ السَّاعَةُ يُبْلِسُ الْمُجْرِمُونَ﴾ الروم ١٢

«On the Day when the Last Hour Arrives, the criminals will lose all hope.»²

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 Soorat ar-Room 30:12.

THEIR EYES WILL BE DIMMED AND BLINDED

In this life, the disbelievers are blind to the truth. A fair punishment for them in the hereafter is to be assembled blind, their eyes blue from terror. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوْمَ يُنْفَخُ فِي الصُّورِ، وَنَحْشُرُ الْمُجْرِمِينَ يَوْمَئِذٍ زُرْقًا ۖ يَتَخَفَتُونَ بَيْنَهُمْ: "إِن لَّبِثْتُمْ إِلَّا عَشْرًا." ۖ نَحْنُ أَعْلَمُ بِمَا يَقُولُونَ، إِذْ يَقُولُ أَمْثَلُهُمْ طَرِيقَةً: "إِن لَّبِثْتُمْ إِلَّا يَوْمًا."﴾ طه ١٠٢-١٠٤

«(Resurrection will be) on the Day when the Horn will be blown, and when We will assemble the wrongdoers, their eyes blue, murmuring among themselves, "You only remained ten days (on earth)." We know best what they will be saying — when the most smart of them will say, "You only remained there one day."»¹

This means that the lasting agonies of the hereafter will make the wrongdoers feel that their first life was no longer than just a few days.

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَمَنْ أَعْرَضَ عَن ذِكْرِي فَإِنَّ لَهُ مَعِيشَةً ضَنْكًا، وَنَحْشُرُهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ أَعْمَى ۗ قَالَ: "رَبِّ لِمَ حَشَرْتَنِي أَعْمَى وَقَدْ كُنْتُ بَصِيرًا؟" ۗ قَالَ: "كَذَلِكَ أَتَتْكَ آيَاتُنَا فَنَسِيتَهَا، وَكَذَلِكَ الْيَوْمَ تُنْسَى."﴾ طه ١٢٤-١٢٦

«And whoever turns away from remembering Me — indeed, he will have a difficult life, and

1 Taahaa 20:102-104.

on Resurrection Day We will assemble him blind. He will say, "My Lord, why have you raised me blind while I was once seeing?" Allaah will say, "Thus did our messages come to you but you ignored them, and thus will you be ignored on this Day."»¹

THEY WILL WALK ON THEIR FACES

In this life, the wrongdoers live a twisted and abnormal life, instead of the simple and happy living that Allaah recommended for them. It is as though they walk on their faces instead of their feet, and as though they prefer to degrade their faces and rub them into the dirt instead of raising and honoring them. As a fair punishment for this, during Assembly, they will be made to truly walk on their faces. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿الَّذِينَ يُحْشَرُونَ عَلَىٰ وُجُوهِهِمْ إِلَىٰ جَهَنَّمَ﴾ الفرقان ٣٤

«Those (losers) who will be assembled upon their faces to Hell.»²

We may wonder how a man can walk on his face. Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that a man asked the Prophet (ﷺ) this very question, and the Prophet (ﷺ) replied:

«أليس الذي مشَّاهُ على الرجلين في الدنيا

قادرًا على أن يمشيه على وجهه؟»

«Isn't the One who made him walk on foot in the first life able to make him walk on his face?»³

1 Soorat Taahaa 20:124-126.

2 Soorat al-Furqaan 25:34.

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and an-Nasaa'ee.

THEY WILL BE DUMB AND DEAF

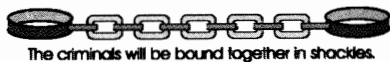
In addition to blindness, the disbelievers will be dumb and mute during Assembly. They will not be able to communicate with others around them, except in limited situations where Allaah (ﷻ) will permit them to talk or listen or see, and this will only add to their regret. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَمَنْ يُضِلِّ فَلَنْ تَجِدَ لَهُمْ أَوْلِيَاءَ مِنْ دُونِهِ، وَنَحْشُرُهُمْ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ عَلَىٰ وُجُوهِهِمْ عُمِيَآ وَبُكْمًا وَصُمًّا مَأْوَاهُمْ جَهَنَّمُ، كُلَّمَا خَبَتْ زِدْنَاهُمْ سَعِيرًا ﴿٩٧﴾ الإسراء ٩٧

«As for those whom Allaah lets go astray — you will never find anyone to protect them from Him, and We will assemble them on Resurrection Day on their faces, blind and dumb and deaf, with Hell as their final abode; every time it subsides, We will increase for them its blazing flame.»¹

THEY WILL BE IN SHACKLES AND IN GARMENTS OF TORTURE

The disbelievers will be assembled in shackles and wearing garments that cause pain and torture. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



The criminals will be bound together in shackles.

«وَتَرَى الْمُجْرِمِينَ يَوْمَئِذٍ مُّقَرَّنِينَ فِي الْأَصْفَادِ ﴿٤٩﴾ سَرَابِلُهُمْ مِّنْ قَطِرَانٍ وَتَغْشَىٰ وُجُوهُهُمُ النَّارُ ﴿٥٠﴾ إبراهيم ٤٩-٥٠

«And you will see the criminals that Day (of Assembly) bound together in shackles, clothed in garments of black pitch, and fire veiling their

1 Soorat al-Israa' 17:97.

faces.»¹

THEIR FACES WILL BE DARKENED

The disbelievers who lie to Allaah and about Him in this life will be resurrected with their faces darkened from grief and shame. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَيَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ تَرَى الَّذِينَ كَذَبُوا عَلَى اللَّهِ وُجُوهُهُم مُّسْوَدَةٌ.

أَلَيْسَ فِي جَهَنَّمَ مَثْوًى لِّلْمُتَكَبِّرِينَ؟﴾ ﴿الزمر ٦٠

«On Resurrection Day, you will see those who lied about Allaah with their faces blackened. Is not Hell the residence for the arrogant?»²

THEY WILL BITE ON THEIR HANDS

Those who disbelieve in Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) and oppose his teachings will regret this on Resurrection Day and will bite on their fingers. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَيَوْمَ يَعَضُّ الظَّالِمُ عَلَى يَدَيْهِ يَقُولُ: "يَا لَيْتَنِي اتَّخَذْتُ مَعَ

الرَّسُولِ سَبِيلًا﴾ يَا وَيْلَتَى لَيْتَنِي لَمْ أَتَّخِذْ فُلَانًا خَلِيلًا ﴿

لَقَدْ أَضَلَّنِي عَنِ الذِّكْرِ بَعْدَ إِذْ جَاءَنِي." وَكَانَ الشَّيْطَانُ لِلْإِنْسَانِ

خَذُولًا﴾ ﴿الفرقان ٢٧-٢٩

«(Warn of) the Day when the wrongdoer will bite on his hands (in regret) and say, "Oh! I wish I had followed a path (of guidance) with the Messenger! Oh, woe to me! I wish I had never

1 Soorat Ibraaheem 14:49-50.

2 Soorat az-Zumar 39:60.

taken so-and-so as a beloved friend! Indeed, he led me astray from (Allaah's) Message after it had come to me. And Satan is ever a betrayer of the human being."»¹

THEY WILL WISH TO RETURN TO THE FIRST LIFE

The disbelievers will see Hell before them and know that it will soon be their eternal abode. They will then wish to go back to the first life to re-live it correctly. But Allaah knows their lying, and He will not grant them their wish. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَلَوْ تَرَىٰ إِذْ وَقَفُوا عَلَىٰ النَّارِ فَقَالُوا: "يَلَيْتَنَّا نُرَدُّ وَلَا نُكَذِّبُ بِبَيِّنَاتِ رَبِّنَا وَنَكُونُ مِنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ." ۞ بَلْ بَدَأَ لَهُمْ مَا كَانُوا يُخْفُونَ مِن قَبْلُ، وَلَوْ رُدُّوا لَعَادُوا لِمَا نُهُوا عَنْهُ وَإِنَّهُمْ لَكَاذِبُونَ ۞﴾ الأنعام ٢٧-٢٨

«If you could but see when they will be made to stand before the Fire and will say, "Oh, we wish that we might return (to the first life): then we would not reject our Lord's messages and we would be among the believers." But no, it has now become clear to them that which they previously concealed. And even if they were brought back, they would return to the very thing that was forbidden to them; and indeed, they are liars.»²

Allaah (ﷻ) also says:

﴿وَلَوْ تَرَىٰ إِذِ الْمُجْرِمُونَ نَاكِسُوا رُؤُوسِهِمْ عِنْدَ رَبِّهِمْ، "رَبَّنَا أَبْصَرْنَا وَسَمِعْنَا، فَارْجِعْنَا نَعْمَلْ صَالِحًا، إِنَّا مُوقِنُونَ." ۞﴾ السجدة ١٢

1 Soorat al-Furqaan 25:27-29

2 Soorat al-An'aam 6:27-28.

«If you could but see how it will be when the wicked will hang their heads before their Lord, (saying,) “Our Lord, we have seen and heard, so return us (to the first life) that we may do good deeds — indeed, we are now certain.”»¹

THEY WILL HATE THEIR FRIENDS AND LEADERS

The disbelievers will hate their close and beloved friends who used to join them in disobedience and sinning. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿الْأَخِلَاءُ يَوْمَئِذٍ بَعْضُهُمْ لِبَعْضٍ عَدُوٌّ إِلَّا الْمُتَّقِينَ﴾ الزخرف ٦٧

«On that Day, close friends will be enemies to one another — except for the pious.»²

They will also hate their leaders who used to urge them to disobey Allaah. Their leaders will then disown them, and they will wish they can do the same to those evil leaders. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِذْ تَبَرَّأَ الَّذِينَ اتَّبَعُوا مِنَ الَّذِينَ اتَّبَعُوا وَرَأَوْا الْعَذَابَ وَتَقَطَّعَتْ بِهِمُ الْأَسْبَابُ﴾ وَقَالَ الَّذِينَ اتَّبَعُوا: “لَوْ أَنَّ لَنَا كَرَّةً فَنَتَبَرَّأَ مِنْهُمْ كَمَا تَبَرَّؤُوا مِنَّا.” كَذَلِكَ يُرِيهِمُ اللَّهُ أَعْمَالَهُمْ حَسَرَاتٍ عَلَيْهِمْ، وَمَا هُمْ بِخَارِجِينَ مِنَ النَّارِ﴾ البقرة ١٦٦-١٦٧

«(On that Day,) those who have been followed will disown their followers, and they (all) will see the punishment, with all their hopes cut to pieces. The followers will then say, “If only we had another chance so we could disown them as they have disowned us.” Thus will Allaah show

1 Soorat as-Sajdah 32:12.

2 Soorat az-Zukhruf 43:67.

them their deeds as bitter regret upon them. And they will never emerge from the Fire.»¹

THEY WILL WISH THEY CAN RANSOM THEMSELVES

Realizing the gravity of the approaching Judgment, the believers would hope they can own twice as much as is on earth so as to use it as ransom. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَلَوْ أَنَّ لِلَّذِينَ ظَلَمُوا مَا فِي الْأَرْضِ جَمِيعًا وَمِثْلَهُ مَعَهُ،
لَأَفْتَدَوْا بِهِ مِنْ سُوءِ الْعَذَابِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ.﴾ الزمر ٤٧

«And if those who did wrong possessed all that is on earth, and the like of it with it, they would surely offer it as ransom from the awful punishment on Resurrection Day.»²

The wrongdoers will wish to ransom themselves from the upcoming punishment with all that was dear to them: wealth, and relatives. This, however, will not be possible. They should have strived to ransom themselves in the first life — simply by holding a true belief in Allaah, obeying His commands, and avoiding His prohibitions. Let us then remember this and act now to save ourselves instead of waiting until it is too late.

¹ Soorat al-Baqarah 2:166-167.

² Soorat az-Zumar 39:47.

Questions and Exercises



1. In the following table, check all true statements (42 points):

	Statement	✓
a	Allaah will destroy this world.	
b	All people will die when the Hour comes.	
c	At the right time, the Horn will be blown by wind.	
d	In the next life, the universe will be made differently from what it is now.	
e	In the next life, the earth will be full of mountains.	
f	In the next life, the earth will be full of dough.	
g	The Horn will be used to blow life into people.	
h	A light rain will cause the people's bodies to grow.	
i	Some people will not be resurrected.	
j	People will be formed out of their finger-bones.	
k	The Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ) will be the first to exit from his grave.	
l	The wrongdoers will be happy to finally leave their graves.	
m	Allaah will hold the earth in His fist.	
n	Allaah will fold the heavens in His hand.	
o	Allaah will be happy with the kings and tyrants.	

	Statement	✓
p	After Resurrection, the people will start moving toward the place of <i>Hashr</i> .	
q	Some people with good excuses will not attend the <i>Hashr</i> .	
r	The people will be naked at the place of <i>Hashr</i> .	
s	The people will be resurrected naked.	
t	Some people will be soaked in sweat up to their necks.	
u	The sun will not be seen during <i>Hashr</i> .	
v	Resurrection Day is fifty thousand years long.	
w	The believers will be very tired from standing many years during Assembly.	
x	The disbelievers will not be able to guess how long they lived in the first life.	
y	The arrogant will be given a filthy drink.	
z	The oppressors will be walking in bright light.	
A	The believers will be grieved by the Greatest Terror.	
B	The angels will cheer the believers.	
C	The martyrs' wounds will disappear upon Resurrection.	
D	The just people will be on platforms of light.	
E	Those who held off their <i>Zakaah</i> will be punished for fifty thousand years.	
F	Betrayal will be clearly exposed during Assembly.	

	Statement	✓
G	During Assembly, some people will have camels and cows upon their necks.	
H	During Assembly, the disbelievers will be comforted by their friends and relatives.	
I	The evildoers will forget how long they lived in the first life.	
J	The disbelievers will never wish to return to the first life.	
K	During Assembly, the wrongdoers will be chained together.	
L	On Resurrection Day, the disbelievers will continue to have hope until the last minute.	
M	During Assembly, some people will bite on their hands.	
N	In the hereafter, the wrongdoers will wish they can ransom themselves with everything dear to them.	
O	If the wrongdoers were to be given a second chance in this life, they may act better.	
P	Satan will help his followers and will never betray them.	

2. Mention ten major incidents that will happen to the universe at the end of time: (10 points)

1	6
2	7
3	8
4	9
5	10

3. Mention and briefly describe eight types of people who will be in the shade of the Throne: (16 points)

Type	Brief Description
1	
2	
3	
4	
5	
6	
7	
8	

4. Mention and briefly explain the reward for four different ways of helping a Muslim: (8 points)

Type of Help	Reward
1	
2	
3	
4	

5. Describe five types of rewards for believers during Resurrection and Assembly: (10 points)

1
2
3
4
5

6. Mention fourteen forms of punishment for the disbelievers and sinful during Resurrection and Assembly: (14 points)

1	8
2	9
3	10
4	11
5	12
6	13
7	14

CHAPTER 3

INTERCESSION & JUDGMENT

Introduction

Allaah (ﷻ) created us for a great wisdom and an important reason. He did not create us pointlessly, nor did He plan to neglect us or overlook our deeds. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿أَفَحَسِبْتُمْ أَنَّمَا خَلَقْنَاكُمْ عَبَثًا وَأَنَّكُمْ إِلَيْنَا لَا تُرْجَعُونَ؟﴾ المومنون ١١٥

«Did you then think that We created you pointlessly and that you will not be brought back to Us (for account)?»¹

Allaah (ﷻ) decreed that we will all die. He will then resurrect us and judge our deeds. He (ﷻ) says:

﴿كُلُّ نَفْسٍ ذَائِقَةُ الْمَوْتِ، وَإِنَّمَا تُوَفَّوْنَ أُجُورَكُمْ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ، فَمَنْ زُحِرَ عَنِ النَّارِ وَأُدْخِلَ الْجَنَّةَ فَقَدْ فَازَ، وَمَا الْحَيَاةُ الدُّنْيَا إِلَّا مَتَاعُ الْغُرُورِ﴾ آل عمران ١٨٥

«Every human being will surely taste death; but only on Resurrection Day will you be given your (full) compensation. So he who will be removed from the Fire and admitted to *Jannah* will indeed have attained success. And the life of this world is nothing but an enjoyment of delusion.»²

1 Soorat al-Mu'minoon 23:115.

2 Soorat Aal 'Imraan 3:185.

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ إِلَيْنَا إِيَابَهُمْ ﴿٢٥﴾ ثُمَّ إِنَّ عَلَيْنَا حِسَابَهُمْ ﴿٢٦﴾﴾ الغاشية ٢٥-٢٦

«Indeed, to Us will be their return. Then indeed, it is for Us to call them to account.»¹

During Judgment, all secrets will be exposed and people will not be able to conceal anything from the consideration of the Most Just:

﴿يَوْمَ تُبْلَى السَّرَائِرُ ﴿٩﴾﴾ الطارق ٩

«(Resurrection will be) the Day when all secrets will be laid bare.»²

The Major Intercession

In the previous chapter, we discussed the major Assembly that will precede the Final Judgment. Judgment, however, will not start until Allaah (ﷻ) is strongly pleaded to do so by the Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ). This is called the Major *Shafaa'ah* (or Intercession) because the Prophet (ﷺ) will intercede³ before Allaah (ﷻ) on behalf of ALL HUMANITY to start the Judgment.

Aboo Sa'eed al-Khudree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أنا سيّد ولدِ آدمَ يومَ القيامةِ، ولا فخرَ. بيدي لواءِ الحمدِ، ولا فخرَ. وما من نبيٍّ يومئذٍ، آدمَ فَمَنْ سِوَاهُ إِلَّا تَحْتَ لِيَوَائِي. وانا أوّلُ من تنشقّ عنه الأرضُ، ولا فخرَ. فيفزعُ الناسُ ثلاثَ فزعَاتٍ،

1 Soorat al-Ghaashiyah 88:25-26.

2 Soorat at-Taariq 86:9.

3 Intercession means mediation between a superior and an inferior so that the superior will grant a favor to the inferior. For example, an employee requesting a pay-raise may ask a friend of his boss to "intercede" with the boss to grant him the raise.

فَيَأْتُونَ آدَمَ فَيَقُولُونَ: "أنت أبونا آدمُ، فأشفعْ لنا إلى ربِّكَ." فيقولُ: "إني أذنبتُ ذنباً أهبطتُ منه إلى الأرضِ. ولكن أئتوا نوحاً." فَيَأْتُونَ نُوحاً فَيَقُولُ: "إني دعوتُ على أهلِ الأرضِ دعوةً فأهلكوا. ولكن أذهبوا إلى إبراهيمَ." فَيَأْتُونَ إِبْرَاهِيمَ، فيقولُ: "إني كذبتُ ثلاثَ كذباتٍ ولكن أئتوا موسى." فَيَأْتُونَ مُوسَى، فيقولُ: "إني قتلتُ نفساً. ولكن أئتوا عيسى." فَيَأْتُونَ عِيسَى، فيقولُ: "إني عبَدتُ من دونِ الله. ولكن أئتوا مُحَمَّدًا." فَيَأْتُونِي، فَأَنْطَلِقُ مَعَهُمْ.

«I will be the chief of all of Aadam's offspring on Resurrection Day — and I do not say this for boasting. I will hold the banner of praise — and I do not say this for boasting. On that Day, there is no prophet, from Aadam down, but that he will be under my banner. I will be the first for whom the earth will split (to exit) — and I do not say this for boasting.

(On that Day) the people will panic three times. So they will go to Aadam and say, "You are our father, so intercede for us with your Lord." He will respond, "Indeed, I have committed a sin that resulted in my dropping to earth. Go to Nooh."

They will go to Nooh, and he will say, "Indeed, I made a curse against the people of earth that resulted in their destruction. Go to Ibraaheem."

They will go to Ibraaheem, and he will say, "I lied three times. ¹ Go to Moosaa."

They will go to Moosaa, and he will say,

1 Ibraaheem's (ﷺ) three "lies", as well as the excuses given by the other prophets, are discussed in the Author's: "Ibraaheem, a Nation in One Man".

“Indeed, I killed a soul. Go to `Eesaa.”

They will go to `Eesaa, and he will say, “Indeed, I was worshiped instead of Allaah. Go to Muhammad.”

So they will come to me, and I will go with them (to seek intercession).> ¹

The Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ) will go and make *sujood* under Allaah’s Throne, and will praise Allaah (ﷻ) with magnificent praises that Allaah will teach him only then and there. Allaah (ﷻ) will then tell him to raise his head because his intercession has been accepted. Then the Judgment will start.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«فَأَنْطَلِقُ فَآتِي تَحْتَ الْعَرْشِ، فَأَقْعُ سَاجِدًا لِرَبِّي، ثُمَّ يَفْتَحُ اللَّهُ عَلَيَّ، وَيُلْهِمُنِي مِنْ مَحَامِدِهِ وَحُسْنِ الثَّنَاءِ عَلَيْهِ شَيْئًا لَمْ يَفْتَحْهُ لِأَحَدٍ قَبْلِي، ثُمَّ يُقَالُ: “يَا مُحَمَّدُ، أَرْفَعْ رَأْسَكَ، سَلْ تُعْطَهُ، أَشْفَعُ تُشَفَّعُ.”»

<Then I will go beneath Allaah’s Throne and fall in prostration before my Lord. And then Allaah will inspire me with such praises and glorification to Him as He never inspired anyone before me. Then it will be said, “O Muhammad, raise your head. Ask, and it will be granted. Intercede, and your intercession will be accepted.”> ²

There will be other intercessions after this major one, which will be done by various prophets and other believers. We will

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by at-Tirmithi (no. 3148), and was verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ut-Tirmithi*). A more commonly cited *hadeeth* regarding the Major Intercession was recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim. Here, however, we cite this shorter narration for space limitations.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

discuss some of them later in this chapter.

The Judgment

Judgment is the time when Allaah (ﷻ) will rate every person according to what he did in his first life. It is the time of harvesting the outcome of our work in this life.

Judgment will be extremely quick and most just. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿ثُمَّ رُدُّوا إِلَى اللَّهِ مَوْلَهُمُ الْحَقُّ، أَلَا لَهُ الْحُكْمُ،

وَهُوَ أَسْرَعُ الْحَسِيبِينَ﴾ ﴿الأنعام ٦٢﴾

«Then they (who have died) are returned to Allaah, their true Lord. Unquestionably, His is the Judgment, and He is the swiftest of all accountants.» ¹

No injustice will be left unsettled. Allaah (ﷻ) will even settle the offenses that took place among animals. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«لَتُؤَدَّنَ الْحُقُوقُ إِلَى أَهْلِهَا يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ،

حَتَّى يُقَادَ لِلشَّاةِ الْجِلْحَاءِ مِنَ الشَّاةِ الْقِرْنَاءِ.»

«The rights will surely be rendered to their people during Resurrection Day — to the extent that a horned goat will be punished on behalf of a goat with a cut ear (that it attacked).» ²

1 Soorat al-An'aam 6:62.

2 Recorded by Muslim.

ALLAAH'S COMING

Once all people are assembled together, the great Judgment will start in a most awe-inspiring manner. The angels will advance lined up in large numbers. They will surround the creation and fill the heavens and earth. Eight enormous angels will be bearing Allaah's Throne. Allaah (ﷻ), while above His Throne and above everything, will come forward ¹, separated from the creation by layers of clouds. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿هَلْ يَنْظُرُونَ إِلَّا أَنْ يَأْتِيَهُمُ اللَّهُ فِي ظُلَلٍ مِّنَ الْغَمَامِ، وَالْمَلَائِكَةُ،
وَقُضِيَ الْأَمْرُ؟ وَإِلَى اللَّهِ تُرْجَعُ الْأُمُورُ﴾ البقرة ٢١٠

«Do they await but that Allaah should come to them in covers of clouds, together with the angels, and the matter will then be decided? And to Allaah all matters are returned.» ²

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿كَلَّا إِذَا دُكَّتِ الْأَرْضُ دَكًّا دَكًّا وَجَاءَ رَبُّكَ، وَالْمَلَكُ صَفًّا صَفًّا
وَجِئَاءَ يَوْمَئِذٍ بِجَهَنَّمَ، يَوْمَئِذٍ يَتَذَكَّرُ الْإِنْسَانُ، وَأَنْتَ لَهُ الذَّكُّرَى؟
يَقُولُ: "يَلَيْتَنِي قَدَّمْتُ لِحَيَاتِي."﴾ الفجر ٢١-٢٤

«No! But when the earth has been leveled — pounded and crushed; and your Lord has come, as well as the angels — rank upon rank; and Hell has been brought that Day within view; on that Day, the human being will remember, but what

1 All of Allaah's authentic qualities and actions must be accepted without suspending their meaning or likening Him to His creation. This is discussed in detail in the first book of this series: "Knowing Allaah".

2 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:210.

will that remembrance avail him? He will say, "Oh, I wish I had provided beforehand for my (eternal) life."»¹

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَإِذَا نُفِخَ فِي الصُّورِ نَفْحَةٌ وَاحِدَةٌ ◉ وَحُمِلَتِ الْأَرْضُ وَالْجِبَالُ
فَدَكَّتَا دَكَّةً وَاحِدَةً ◉ فَيَوْمَئِذٍ وَقَعَتِ الْوَاقِعَةُ ◉ وَأَنْشَقَّتِ
السَّمَاءُ، فَهِيَ يَوْمَئِذٍ وَاهِيَةٌ ◉ وَالْمَلَكُ عَلَى أَرْجَائِهَا، وَيَحْمِلُ
عَرْشَ رَبِّكَ فَوْقَهُمْ يَوْمَئِذٍ ثَمَنِيَّةٌ ◉ يَوْمَئِذٍ تُعْرَضُونَ لَا تَخْفَى
مِنْكُمْ خَافِيَةٌ ◉﴾ الحاقة ١٣-١٨

«When the Horn will be blown a single blow, and the earth and the mountains will be lifted up and crushed with a single stroke — then, on that Day, the *Waaqi'ah* (Great Occurrence) will strike; and the sky will split open so that, on that Day, it will be feeble; and the angels will be on its sides; and, above them, eight (angels) will bear your Lord's Throne on that Day. On that Day, you will be presented (for judgment), not even your most hidden (deeds) remaining hidden.»²

BRINGING HELL TO VIEW

The stand for Judgment will be even more terrifying when Hell is brought to view, pulled by millions of angels. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَجِإِيءَ يَوْمَئِذٍ بِجَهَنَّمَ، يَوْمَئِذٍ يَتَذَكَّرُ الْإِنْسَانُ،

1 Soorat al-Fajr 89:21-24.

2 Soorat al-Haaqqah 69:13-18.

وَأَتَىٰ لَهُ الذِّكْرَىٰ؟ ﴿٢٣﴾ الفجر ٢٣

«And Hell has been brought that Day within view; on that Day, the human being will remember, but what will that remembrance benefit him?»¹

Ibn Mas'ood (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يُؤْتَىٰ بِجَهَنَّمَ يَوْمَئِذٍ لَهَا سَبْعُونَ أَلْفَ زِمَامٍ،
مع كلِّ زِمَامٍ سَبْعُونَ أَلْفَ مَلَكٍ يَجْرُؤْنَهَا.»

«Hell will be pulled on the Day of Judgment with seventy thousand ropes, each rope held by seventy thousand angels.»²

Hell will be brought like a wild and untamed animal, requiring a great number of strong angels to keep it under control. May Allaah (ﷻ) save us from it.

PRESENTING THE CREATION BEFORE THE LORD

We saw above that we will be presented before Allaah (ﷻ) for the Judgment. We will be presented to Him lined in rows, while, at the same time, each person will stand as a lonely individual. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَعَرَضُوا عَلَىٰ رَبِّكَ صَفًّا، ”لَقَدْ جِئْتُمُونَا كَمَا خَلَقْنَاكُمْ أَوَّلَ
مَرَّةٍ، بَلْ زَعَمْتُمْ أَلَّنْ نَجْعَلَ لَكُمْ مَوْعِدًا.“ ﴿١٠﴾ وَوَضَعَ الْكِتَابُ،
فَتَرَىٰ الْمُجْرِمِينَ مُشْفِقِينَ مِمَّا فِيهِ، وَيَقُولُونَ: ”يَا وَيْلَتَنَا، مَا لِ

1 Soorat al-Fajr 89:23.

2 Recorded by Muslim and at-Tirmithi from Ibn Mas'ood (رضي الله عنه).

هَذَا الْكِتَابِ لَا يُغَادِرُ صَغِيرَةً وَلَا كَبِيرَةً إِلَّا أَحْصَاهَا؟“ وَوَجَدُوا
مَا عَمِلُوا حَاضِرًا، وَلَا يَظْلِمُ رَبُّكَ أَحَدًا ﴿٤٨﴾ الكهف ٤٨-٤٩

«And they will be lined up before your Lord, (and He will say,) “Now, you have certainly come to Us (in a lonely state ¹) just as We created you the first time — although you used to claim that We would never appoint for you a meeting.” And the record (of deeds) will be laid open; and you will see the wrongdoers fearful of what is in it, and they will say, “Oh, woe to us! What a record is this? It leaves out nothing, small or great, but that it takes it into account!” And they will find all that they ever did present before them, for your Lord does not wrong anyone.» ²

No one can linger behind or slip away from the overwhelming stand before the Lord. Each person will be accompanied by two guards from the angels: a driver and a witness. The driver will lead him to the plane of Judgment, and the witness will be the angel (or two angels) that recorded his deeds. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَنُفِخَ فِي الصُّورِ، ذَلِكَ يَوْمُ الْوَعِيدِ ﴿٢٠﴾ وَجَاءَتْ
كُلُّ نَفْسٍ مَّعَهَا سَائِقٌ وَشَهِيدٌ ﴿٢١﴾﴾ ق ٢٠-٢١

«And the Horn will be blown. That will be the Day of carrying out the warnings. And every soul will come, with it a driver and a witness.» ³

1 This is mentioned explicitly in *Soorat al-An'aam* 6:94.

2 *Soorat al-Kahf* 18:48-49.

3 *Soorat Qaaf* 50:20-21.

CARRYING THE BURDENS

On that Day, the evil deeds will materialize into actual burdens that people will carry on their backs. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



﴿لِيَحْمِلُوا أَوْزَارَهُمْ كَامِلَةً يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ وَمِنْ أَوْزَارِ الَّذِينَ يُضِلُّونَهُمْ بِغَيْرِ عِلْمٍ، أَلَا سَاءَ مَا يَزُرُونَ﴾ النحل ٢٥

«Let them (the disbelievers) on Resurrection Day bear their full burdens (of sins), as well as some of the burdens of those ignorant ones whom they misguided. Unquestionably, evil is that which they will bear.»¹

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿قَدْ حَسِرَ الَّذِينَ كَذَبُوا بِلِقَاءِ اللَّهِ، حَتَّىٰ إِذَا جَاءَتْهُمْ السَّاعَةُ بَغْتَةً قَالُوا: "يَا حَسْرَتْنَا عَلَىٰ مَا فَرَّطْنَا فِيهَا!" وَهُمْ يَحْمِلُونَ أَوْزَارَهُمْ عَلَىٰ ظُهُورِهِمْ. أَلَا سَاءَ مَا يَزُرُونَ﴾ الأنعام ٣١

«Lost indeed are those who deny the meeting with Allaah. When the Last Hour suddenly comes upon them, they will cry, "Oh, how great is our regret for having neglected it." And they will be bearing their burdens (of sins) on their backs. Unquestionably, evil is that which they will bear.»²

On that Day, no one will be willing to help others in carrying

1 Soorat an-Nahl 16:25.

2 Soorat al-An'aam 6:31.

their loads. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَلَا تَزِرُ وَازِرَةٌ وِزْرَ أُخْرَىٰ، وَإِن تَدْعُ مُثْقَلَةٌ إِلَىٰ أِمْتَالِهَا
لَا يَحْمِلُ مِنْهُ شَيْءٌ وَلَوْ كَانَ ذَا قُرْبَىٰ﴾. ﴿فاطر ١٨﴾

«And no bearer of burdens will be made to bear another's burden. And if a heavily laden person calls another to help him carry it, nothing of it will be carried, even if he should be a close relative.» ¹

NO KINSHIP TIES

During that Day, no parent will be willing or able to help his child, and no child will be willing or able to help his parent. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ اتَّقُوا رَبَّكُمُ، وَأَحْشُوا يَوْمًا لَا يَجْزِي وَالِدٌ عَن
وَلَدِهِ، وَلَا مَوْلُودٌ هُوَ جَارٌ عَن وَالِدِهِ شَيْئًا﴾. ﴿لقمان ٣٣﴾

«O people, revere and fear your Lord, and beware a Day when no parent will be of any help to his child, nor will a child be of any help to his parent.» ²

The kinship ties will be useless and forgotten in the face of the great hardships of that Day. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَإِذَا نُفِخَ فِي الصُّورِ فَلَا أَنْسَابَ بَيْنَهُمْ يَوْمَئِذٍ
وَلَا يَتَسَاءَلُونَ﴾. ﴿المؤمنون ١٠١﴾

1 Soorat Faatir 35:18.

2 Soorat Luqmaan 31:33.

«So when the Horn is blown, no ties of kinship will exist among them that Day, nor will they ask about one another.»¹

A person's greater concern will make him run away from his closest relatives. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَإِذَا جَاءَتِ الصَّاحَّةُ ﴿١﴾ يَوْمَ يَفِرُّ الْمَرْءُ مِنْ أَخِيهِ ﴿٢﴾ وَأُمِّهِ وَأَبِيهِ ﴿٣﴾
وَصَاحِبَتِهِ وَبَنِيهِ ﴿٤﴾ لِكُلِّ أَمْرٍ مِّنْهُمْ يَوْمَئِذٍ شَأْنٌ يُغْنِيهِ ﴿٥﴾ وَجُوهٌ
يَوْمَئِذٍ مُّسْفِرَةٌ ﴿٦﴾ ضَاحِكَةٌ مُّسْتَبْشِرَةٌ ﴿٧﴾ وَوُجُوهٌ يَوْمَئِذٍ عَلَيْهَا غَبَرَةٌ ﴿٨﴾
تَرْهَقُهَا قَتَرَةٌ ﴿٩﴾ أُولَئِكَ هُمُ الْكٰفِرَةُ الْفٰجِرَةُ ﴿١٠﴾﴾ عبس ٣٣-٤٢

«So when there comes the Deafening Blast, on the Day a man will flee from his brother, and from his mother and father, and from his wife and children: on that Day, for each of them will his own affairs be of sufficient concern to him. Some faces, that Day, will be bright, laughing, rejoicing at good news; and other faces, that Day, will be covered with dust and overweighed with darkness — these are the disbelievers and the wicked ones.»²

The evil people, on that Day, will even wish that they can sacrifice their closest relatives to save themselves. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَلَا يَسْتَلُ حَمِيمٌ حَمِيمًا ﴿١﴾ يُبْصِرُونَهُمْ، يَوَدُّ الْمُجْرِمُ لَوْ يَفْتَدِي
مِنْ عَذَابِ يَوْمِئِذٍ بَنِيهِ ﴿٢﴾ وَصَاحِبَتِهِ وَأَخِيهِ ﴿٣﴾ وَفَصِيلَتِهِ الَّتِي
تُؤْتِيهِ ﴿٤﴾ وَمَنْ فِي الْأَرْضِ جَمِيعًا ثُمَّ يُنْجِيهِ ﴿٥﴾﴾ المعارج ١٠-١٤

1 Soorat al-Mu'minoon 23:101.

2 Soorat 'Abasa 80:33-42.

«(That Day) no friend will ask (anything) of a friend, though they will be in one another's sight. A criminal will wish that he could ransom himself from the punishment of that Day by his children, and his wife, and his brother, and his nearest kinsfolk who used to shelter him, and whoever else lived on earth — so that he could save but himself.»¹

ALLAAH WILL SPEAK TO ALL

Allaah will speak to each of us on Judgment Day. Let us, then, be prepared for what we will say to the Lord of Lords. 'Adiyy Bin Haatim (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ما منكم من أحدٍ إلا سيُكَلِّمُهُ رَبُّهُ، ليس بينه وبينه تُرْجُمانٌ،
 فيَنْظُرُ أَيَمَنَ مِنْهُ فلا يرى إلا ما قَدَّمَ مِنْ عَمَلِهِ، وَيَنْظُرُ أَشْأَمَ مِنْهُ
 فلا يرى إلا ما قَدَّمَ، وَيَنْظُرُ بَيْنَ يَدَيْهِ فلا يرى إلا النَّارَ تَلْقَاءَ
 وَجْهِهِ. فَاتَّقُوا النَّارَ ولو بِشِقِّ تَمْرَةٍ.»

«There is no one among you but Allaah will speak to him (on Judgment Day) without a translator. He will look to his right and see nothing but the deeds that he did; and he will look to his left and see nothing but what he did; and he will look in front of him and see nothing but the Fire facing him. So safeguard yourselves from the Fire, even if it is with half a date (of charity).»²

There are some texts indicating that, on Resurrection Day,

1 Soorat al-Ma'aarij 70:10-14.

2 This hadeeth was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

Allaah will not speak to or look at some wrongdoers. For example, Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ يَشْتَرُونَ بِعَهْدِ اللَّهِ وَأَيْمَانِهِمْ ثَمَنًا قَلِيلًا أُولَٰئِكَ لَا خَلَاقَ لَهُمْ فِي الْآخِرَةِ، وَلَا يُكَلِّمُهُمُ اللَّهُ، وَلَا يَنْظُرُ إِلَيْهِمْ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ، وَلَا يُزَكِّيهِمْ، وَلَهُمْ عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ﴾ آل عمران ٧٧

«Indeed, those who trade their covenant to Allaah and their pledges for a worthless gain will have no share in the hereafter, and Allaah will not speak to them or look upon them on Resurrection Day, nor will He purify them; and they will have a painful punishment.»¹

Aboo Tharr al-Ghaffaaree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ثلاثة لا يكلمهم الله ولا ينظر إليهم يوم القيامة ولا يزكيهم، ولهم عذاب أليم: المسبل، والمنفق سلعته بالحلف الكاذب، والمنان.»

«There are three types of people that, on Resurrection Day, Allaah will not speak to them, look upon them, or purify them, and they will have a painful punishment: (a man) who drags his garments, a person who markets his merchandise with untruthful oaths, and a person who boasts about his favors toward others.»²

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ثلاثة لا يكلمهم الله يوم القيامة ولا يزكيهم ولا ينظر إليهم،

1 Soorat Aal 'Imraan 3:77.

2 Recorded by Muslim, Ahmad, and others.

ولهم عذابٌ أليمٌ: شيخٌ زانٍ، ومَلِكٌ كذّابٌ، وعائِلٌ مُستَكْبِرٌ.»

«There are three types of people that, on Resurrection Day, Allaah will not speak to them, purify them, or look upon them, and they will have a painful punishment: an adulterous old man, a lying king, and an arrogant, though poor, head of a family.»¹

These texts mean that, for such wrongdoers, Allaah (ﷻ) will not speak kindly to them, nor will He look upon them with mercy on Resurrection Day.² Yet, He will look and speak to them the look and speech of a solemn Judge.

FIRST MATTERS OF JUDGMENT

During the course of Judgment, Allaah will ask every person about what he did in the first life. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَوَرَبِّكَ لَنَسْأَلَنَّهُمْ أَجْمَعِينَ ﴿٩٢﴾ عَمَّا كَانُوا يَعْمَلُونَ ﴿٩٣﴾﴾

«So by your Lord, We will surely question them all about what they used to do.»³

But in the beginning of a person's judgment, Allaah (ﷻ) will remind him of the great favors that He bestowed on him in the first life — favors that he should have used to please and obey Him. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿كَلَّا لَوْ تَعْلَمُونَ عِلْمَ الْيَقِينِ ﴿٥﴾ لَتَرَوُنَّ الْجَحِيمَ ﴿٦﴾ ثُمَّ لَتَرَوْهَا ۖ
عَيْنَ الْيَقِينِ ﴿٧﴾ ثُمَّ لَتَسْأَلَنَّ يَوْمَئِذٍ عَنِ النَّعِيمِ ﴿٨﴾﴾

1 Recorded by Muslim, an-Nasaa'ee, and others.

2 As explained by Ibn Katheer.

3 Soorat al-Hijr 15:92-93.

«No! If you only knew with knowledge of certainty. You will surely see the Hellfire; then you will surely see it with the eye of certainty; then, on that Day, you will surely be called to account for (what you did with) the pleasure (that Allaah gave you).»¹

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنَّ أَوَّلَ مَا يُسْأَلُ عَنْهُ الْعَبْدُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ مِنَ النَّعِيمِ أَنْ يُقَالَ لَهُ:
«أَلَمْ نُصِحَّ لَكَ جِسْمَكَ وَتَرَوَيْكَ مِنَ الْمَاءِ الْبَارِدِ؟»»

«Indeed, on Resurrection Day, the first of Allaah's favors that a person will be questioned about is, "Did We not make your body healthy and give you cool water to drink?"»²

Allaah will then settle all disputes relating to blood, which include murder and bodily harms that were inflicted among the people, and the guilty will be quickly indicted. Ibn Mas'ood (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أَوَّلُ مَا يُقْضَى بَيْنَ النَّاسِ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ فِي الدَّمَاءِ.»

«The first thing that will be settled among the people during Resurrection Day is blood.»³

As for personal acts of worship, the first act that will be considered is the prayer. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

1 Soorat at-Takaathur 102:5-8.

2 Recorded by at-Tirmitheeh, Ibn Hibbaan, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 539).

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

«إِنَّ أَوَّلَ مَا يُحَاسَبُ بِهِ الْعَبْدُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ صَلَاتُهُ، فَإِنْ صَلَحَتْ فَقَدْ أَفْلَحَ وَأَنْجَحَ، وَإِنْ فَسَدَتْ فَقَدْ خَابَ وَخَسِرَ.»

«The first thing for which a person will account during Resurrection Day is his prayer. If it was good, he will be successful; and if it was bad, he will be a loser.» ¹

FIVE INEVITABLE QUESTIONS

An important part of every person's judgment is that he will be asked how he used five of Allaah's favors on him.

'Abdullaah Bin Mas'ood and Aboo Burazah (رضي الله عنه) reported that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) said:

«لا تزولُ قدما ابنِ آدمٍ يومَ القيامةِ من عندِ ربِّه حتى يُسألَ عن خمسٍ: عن عمره فيمِ أفناه، وعن جسمه فيمِ أبلاه، وعن ماله من أين اكتسبه وفيمِ أنفقَه، وماذا عملَ فيما علم؟»

«On the Day of Resurrection, a human being's feet will not depart from before his Lord until he is questioned about five things: How he consumed his lifetime, how he wore out his body, how he earned and spent his wealth, and what he did in implementing what he knew.» ²

Let us, then, strive to have satisfactory answers for these questions. Let us use Allaah's infinite favors upon us in performing things that please Him (ﷻ).

1 Recorded by at-Tirmithi, an-Nasaa'ee, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ul-Jaami'* no. 2020).

2 Recorded by at-Tirmithi. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 946).

ACCOUNT AUDITING

For some people, Judgment will be easy. They may be shown their record of good and bad deeds, but, on the overall, they will be quickly forgiven and admitted to *Jannah*. Others, however, will be audited: their account will be closely examined and they will be questioned about different things that they did. This will be an indication of their imminent punishment.

'Aa'ishah (رضي الله عنها) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ليس أحدٌ يُحاسبُ يومَ القيامةِ إلاَّ هلك.»

«On Resurrection Day, no one is held accountable except that will be doomed.»

On hearing this, 'Aa'ishah (رضي الله عنها) argued that Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَسَوْفَ يُحَاسَبُ حِسَابًا يَسِيرًا﴾ الانشقاق ٨

«(As for him who is given his record in his right hand,) he will be given an easy accounting.»¹

The Prophet (ﷺ) then explained:

«إنما ذلك العرضُ، ولكن من نوقشَ الحسابَ يهلك.»

«This only refers to presenting the records. But as for a person whose account is closely examined, he will be doomed.»²

THE BANKRUPT

On Judgment Day, some people will come with loads of good deeds. At the same time, they will have a long record of

1 Soorat al-Inshiqaaq 84:8.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

atrocities and harm that they inflicted on others. Allaah (ﷻ) will then give from their good deeds to those that they hurt, and will then give them from the sins of the others. Thus, they will lose all their good deeds and end up with a great burden of bad deeds that will lead them to Hell.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«من كانت له مظلمة لأخيه، من عرضيه أو شيء، فليتحلله منه اليوم قبل أن لا يكون ديناراً ولا درهماً. إن كان له عمل صالح أخذ بقدر مظلمته، وإن لم تكن له حسنات أخذ من سيئات صاحبه فحمل عليه.»

«He who has directed injustice to his (Muslim) brother, whether in his honor or otherwise, should seek his forgiveness for it today before a time comes when there will be no *deenaar* or *dirham* (gold and silver currencies). During that Day, if he has good deeds, they will be reduced by the amount of his injustice; and if he does not have good deeds, he will be burdened by some of his companion's sins.»¹

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) also reported that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) once asked his companions, «أتدرون ما المُفلس؟» «Do you know who is truly bankrupt?» They answered, "A bankrupt among us is one who does not have any wealth." The Messenger (ﷺ) then explained:

«إِنَّ الْمُفْلِسَ مِنْ أُمَّتِي مَنْ يَأْتِي يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ بِصَلَاةٍ وَصِيَامٍ وَزَكَاةٍ، وَيَأْتِي قَدْ شَتَمَ هَذَا، وَقَذَفَ هَذَا، وَأَكَلَ مَالَ هَذَا، وَسَفَكَ دَمَ هَذَا، وَضَرَبَ هَذَا. فَيُعْطَى هَذَا مِنْ حَسَنَاتِهِ، وَهَذَا مِنْ حَسَنَاتِهِ. فَإِنْ

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and others.

فَنِيَّتْ حَسَنَاتُهُ قَبْلَ أَنْ يُقْضَى مَا عَلَيْهِ، أُخِذَ مِنْ خَطَايَاهُمْ
فَطُرِحَتْ عَلَيْهِ، ثُمَّ طُرِحَ فِي النَّارِ.»

«A truly bankrupt person from my *Ummah* is a person who will come on Judgment Day with (his records containing) prayers, fasting, and charity. But he will also come having cursed so-and-so, back-bit so-and-so, eaten from so-and-so's wealth, shed so-and-so's blood, and hit so-and-so. Thus, so-and-so will be given from his good deeds, and so-and-so will be given from his good deeds. If all of his good deeds are finished before he fulfills all his debts, some of their sins will be taken from them and thrown on him, and he will then be thrown into the Fire.» ¹

THE FIRST PERSONS TO BE INDICTED

The first people to be found guilty on Judgment Day are those who do their acts of worship for showing-off instead of doing them sincerely for Allaah (ﷻ). Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنَّ أَوَّلَ النَّاسِ يُقْضَى يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ عَلَيْهِ رَجُلٌ أَسْتَشْهَدَ، فَأَتِيَّ بِهِ فَعَرَفَهُ نِعْمَهُ فَعَرَفَهَا. قَالَ: "فَمَا عَمِلْتَ فِيهَا؟" قَالَ: "قَاتَلْتُ فِيكَ حَتَّى أَسْتَشْهَدْتُ." قَالَ: "كَذَبْتَ، وَلَكِنَّكَ قَاتَلْتَ لِأَنْ يُقَالَ جَرِيءٌ، فَقَدْ قِيلَ." ثُمَّ أُمِرَ بِهِ فَسُحِبَ عَلَى وَجْهِهِ حَتَّى أَلْقِيَ فِي النَّارِ. وَرَجُلٌ تَعَلَّمَ الْعِلْمَ وَعَلَّمَهُ وَقَرَأَ الْقُرْآنَ، فَأَتِيَّ بِهِ فَعَرَفَهُ نِعْمَهُ فَعَرَفَهَا. قَالَ: "فَمَا عَمِلْتَ فِيهَا؟" قَالَ: "تَعَلَّمْتُ الْعِلْمَ وَعَلَّمْتُهُ،

¹ Recorded by Muslim and others.

وقرأتُ فيكَ القرآنَ.“ قال: ”كذبتَ، ولكِنَّكَ تعلَّمتَ العِلْمَ لِيُقَالَ
عالمٌ، وقرأتَ القرآنَ لِيُقَالَ قارئٌ، فقد قيلَ.“ ثمَّ أُمرَ به فسُحِبَ
على وجهه حتَّى ألقِيَ في النارِ. ورجُلٌ وسَّعَ اللهُ عليه وأعطاهُ
من أصنافِ المالِ كُلِّه، فأَتِيَ به فعرَّفَه نِعْمَهُ فعرَّفَها. قال: ”فما
عملتَ فيها؟“ قال: ”ما تركتُ من سبيلٍ تُحِبُّ أن يُنْفَقَ فيها إلاَّ
أنفقتُ فيها لك.“ قال: ”كذبتَ، ولكِنَّكَ فعلتَ لِيُقَالَ هو جوادٌ،
فقد قيلَ.“ ثمَّ أُمرَ به فسُحِبَ على وجهه حتَّى ألقِيَ في النارِ.

◀Indeed, the first people who will be found guilty on Resurrection Day are:

1. A man who was martyred. He will be brought forth, and Allaah will remind him of His favors on him, which he will acknowledge. Allaah will then ask him, "In what way, then, did you use them?" He will reply, "I fought for Your cause until I was martyred." Allaah will tell him, "You lie! You only fought so that it would be said that you were brave, which has been said." The command will then be issued and he will be dragged over his face until he is thrown into the Fire.
2. A man who learned the Knowledge and taught it and recited the Qur'aan. He will be brought forth, and Allaah will remind him of His favors on him, which he will acknowledge. Allaah will then ask him, "In what way, then, did you use them?" He will reply, "I learned the Knowledge and taught it and recited the Qur'aan for Your sake." Allaah will tell him, "You lie! You only learned the Knowledge so that it would be

said that you were a learned man, and you recited the Qur'aan so that it would be said that you were a recitor, which has been said." The command will then be issued and he will be dragged over his face until he is thrown into the Fire.

3. A man whom Allaah gave an easy life and granted all sorts of riches. He will be brought forth, and Allaah will remind him of His favors on him, which he will acknowledge. Allaah will then ask him, "In what way, then, did you use them?" He will reply, "I left no way in which You love that money be spent but I spent it for Your sake." Allaah will tell him, "You lie! You only spent so that it would be said that you were generous, which has been said." The command will then be issued and he will be dragged over his face until he is thrown into the Fire.> ¹

This should remind us to perform our acts of worship with *ikhlaas* (full sincerity) to Allaah (ﷻ). Otherwise, we could be among the first people to burn in the Fire — may Allaah (ﷻ) forbid.

COVERING A BELIEVER'S SINS

Some believers have strong faith and are full of good. Their sins are little compared to their good deeds. During Judgment, Allaah (ﷻ) will forgive their sins and completely remove them from their record. Furthermore, He will do this privately so that no other people will know about them. Ibn 'Umar (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

¹ Recorded by Muslim and others.

«إِنَّ اللَّهَ يُدْنِي الْمُؤْمِنَ فَيَضَعُ عَلَيْهِ كَنَفَهُ وَيَسْتُرُهُ، فيقول: "أَتَعْرِفُ ذَنْبَ كَذَا؟ أَتَعْرِفُ ذَنْبَ كَذَا؟" فيقول: "نعم، أي رب." حتى قرره بذنوبه، ورأى في نفسه أَنَّهُ قَدْ هَلَكَ. قال: "سترتها عليك في الدنيا، وأنا أغفرها لك اليوم." فيُعْطَى كِتَابَ حَسَنَاتِهِ. وَأَمَّا الْكُفَّارُ وَالْمُنَافِقُونَ، فينادى بهم على رؤوس الخلائق: ﴿هُؤُلَاءِ الَّذِينَ كَذَبُوا عَلَى رَبِّهِمْ، أَلَا لَعْنَةُ اللَّهِ عَلَى الظَّالِمِينَ﴾ ﴿هود ١٨﴾

«Indeed, Allaah will bring the believer near Him and cover him with a veil. He will then ask him, "Do you recognize such-and-such sin? Do you recognize such-and-such sin?" He will reply, "Yes, O my Lord." Thus, Allaah will make him admit to all his sins, and he will feel that he is surely doomed. But then Allaah will say, "I have covered them for you in the first life, and I forgive them for you this Day." He will then be given the records of his good deeds. But as for the disbelievers and hypocrites, they will be called in front of all people:

«These are the ones who lied about their Lord. Unquestionably, Allaah's curse is upon the wrongdoers.»^{1, 2}

May Allaah (ﷻ) cover our sins and forgive them for us.

THE JUDGMENT IS FINAL

Once Allaah (ﷻ) passes His judgment, that will be the final decree. It cannot be wrong or unfair, and it may not be

1 Soorat Hood 11:18.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

negotiated or appealed. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿مَا يُبَدَّلُ الْقَوْلُ لَدَيَّ، وَمَا أَنَا بِظَلَّامٍ لِلْعَبِيدِ﴾ ق ٢٩

«The word (of decree) will not be changed with Me, and never will I be unjust to the servants.»¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَاللَّهُ يَحْكُمُ، لَا مُعَقِّبَ لِحُكْمِهِ، وَهُوَ سَرِيعُ الْحِسَابِ﴾ الرعد ٤١

«When Allaah judges, there can be no adjuster of His judgment. And He is swift in account.»²

SATAN'S CONCLUSIVE SPEECH

After Judgment is concluded and the wrongdoers realize that they have no escape from Hell, their greatest seducer, Satan, will step forward and address them with a short but eloquent speech. As sly as ever, he will disavow his ability to help or support them, and will plainly express that He gave them false promises while Allaah told them the truth. He will tell them that neither can he save them now, nor can they save him from the great punishment. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَقَالَ الشَّيْطَانُ لَمَّا قُضِيَ الْأَمْرُ: "إِنَّ اللَّهَ وَعَدَكُمْ وَعَدَ الْحَقُّ،
وَوَعَدْتُكُمْ فَأَخْلَفْتُكُمْ. وَمَا كَانَ لِي عَلَيْكُمْ مِّنْ سُلْطٰنٍ إِلَّا أَن
دَعَوْتُكُمْ فَاسْتَجَبْتُمْ لِي. فَلَا تُلْمُونِي وَلَوْلَا أَنفُسُكُمْ، مَا أَنَا
بِمُصْرِحِكُمْ، وَمَا أَنْتُمْ بِمُصْرِحِيَّ، إِنِّي كَفَرْتُ بِمَا أَشْرَكْتُمُونِ

1 Soorat Qaaf 50:29.

2 Soorat ar-Ra'd 13:41.

مِنْ قَبْلُ. ” إِنَّ الظَّالِمِينَ لَهُمْ عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ ﴿٢٢﴾ إبراهيم ٢٢

«And Satan will say when the matter has been concluded, “Indeed, Allaah had promised you the promise of truth, whereas I promised you but betrayed you. But I had no authority over you except that I invited you, and you responded to me. So do not blame me; but blame yourselves. I cannot be called to your aid, nor can you be called to my aid. Indeed, I deny that you previously joined me (with Allaah).” Indeed, for the wrongdoers is a painful punishment.»¹

Ahl ul-Fatrah (People Without Messengers)

“*Ahl ul-Fatrah*” are those who lived at a time, or place, or situation that prevented them from receiving a clear and convincing message about Allaah (ﷻ). Even though they may have died as disbelievers, Allaah (ﷻ), out of His perfect justice and mercy, would not admit them to Hell without a fair trial. He will give them a trial that, in His knowledge, will be equivalent to the trials that other people face in this life.

Among *Ahl ul-Fatrah* are those who never received a messenger from Allaah, young children of disbelievers² who died before reaching puberty, old people who were senile when the message came to them, mentally disabled people, deaf people who could not communicate at all, and so on.

Anas, Aboo Sa’eed, and others (رضي الله عنهم) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يُوتَى بِأَرْبَعَةِ يَوْمٍ الْقِيَامَةِ: بِالْمَوْلُودِ، وَبِالْمَعْتُوهِ، وَبِمَاتٍ فِي الْفِتْرَةِ،

1 Soorat Ibraaheem 14:22.

2 As for believers’ children who die before puberty, there are authentic hadeeths indicating that they will all go to *Jannah*.

والشيخ الفاني، كلُّهم يتكلَّمُ بِحُجَّتِهِ. فيقولُ الربُّ تباركُ وتعالى لِعُنُقِ من النارِ: ”أَبْرُزْ.“ فيقولُ لَهُم: ”إني كنتُ أبعثُ إلى عبادي رُسُلًا مِنْ أَنفُسِهِمْ، وَإِني رسولُ نفسي إليكم. أَدْخُلُوا هذِهِ.“ فيقولُ من كُتِبَ عليه الشقاءُ: ”يا ربِّ! أين ندخلُها ومنها كُنَّا نَفِرُّ؟“ فيقولُ تباركُ وتعالى: ”أنتم لِرُسُلي أَشدُّ تكذيباً ومَعْصيةً.“ ومن كُتِبَ عليه السعادةُ يَمْضي فيقتحِمُ فيها مُسرِعاً. فيدخلُ هؤلاءِ الجنةَ، وهؤلاءِ النارَ..»

◁On Resurrection Day, four types of individuals will be brought forward (before Allaah), each presenting his argument (of not receiving the full message): a child (who died before puberty), a mad man, a person that no messenger came in his time, and a very old man (who became senile). The Lord (ﷻ) will command a tongue to come out from the Fire, and will then tell them, “I used to send to my servants messengers from among themselves and, indeed, I am now My own messenger to you. Enter this (fire).” As for those who will be destined to misery, they will say, “O our Lord, why should we enter this from which we always used to run away?” Allaah will tell them, “(If you dare to disobey Me now) you would then show even more denial and disobedience to My messengers.” And as for those who will be destined to happiness, they will go forth and rush to enter that fire. Thus, they will enter *Jannah*, whereas the others will enter Hell.›¹

1 Recorded by Aboo Ya'laa, al-Baghawee, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* nos. 1434, 2468).

This should teach us not to pinpoint any disbeliever in this life and say that he or she will definitely end up in Hell. First of all, we do not know what their faith will be at the time of death. Secondly, we usually cannot be sure that they have received the Message in its true form and then rejected it, which would then mean that they denied the truth from Allaah. It is only to Allaah to determine these things, and He will surely do so with perfect precision on Judgment Day.

This understanding would give us a more positive attitude when dealing with non-Muslims around us, because every one of them could potentially be our neighbor in *Jannah* — may Allaah (ﷻ) admit us into it with His mercy and generosity, *aameen*.

The Witnesses

During Judgment Day, there will be many witnesses against every person. Therefore, no person will be able to deny any charges or claims that he had an unfair trial.

ALLAAH'S TESTIMONY

The greatest witness over us is our Lord and Creator: Allaah (ﷻ). Allaah (ﷻ) is the most precise and watchful Witness over us. No small action or thought escapes His close observation. There are things that we did and may have forgotten, but Allaah forgets nothing. During Judgment Day, He will disclose to us all what we did:

﴿يَوْمَ يَبْعَثُهُمُ اللَّهُ جَمِيعًا فَيُنَبِّئُهُم بِمَا عَمِلُوا، أَحْصَاهُ اللَّهُ

وَنَسُوهُ، وَاللَّهُ عَلَىٰ كُلِّ شَيْءٍ شَهِيدٌ﴾ المجادلة ٦

«(The punishment will be) on the Day when Allaah will resurrect them all and inform them of

what they did. Allaah had listed it, while they forgot it, for Allaah is Witness over all things.»¹

TESTIMONY OF THE ANGELS

There are angels appointed by Allaah as witnesses over each one of us. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَإِنَّ عَلَيْكُمْ لَحَافِظِينَ كِرَامًا كَاتِبِينَ ﴿۱۰﴾
يَعْلَمُونَ مَا تَفْعَلُونَ ﴿۱۱﴾﴾ الانفطار ۱۰-۱۲

«Surely, there are (angels) appointed over you to watch you. They are honorable recorders. They know all that you do.»²

Also, Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِذْ يَتَلَقَى الْمُتَلَقِيَانِ عَنِ الْيَمِينِ وَعَنِ الشِّمَالِ قَعِيدٌ ﴿۱۷﴾
مَا يَلْفِظُ مِنْ قَوْلٍ إِلَّا لَدَيْهِ رَقِيبٌ عَتِيدٌ ﴿۱۸﴾﴾ ق ۱۷-۱۸

«(We know) when the two receiving (angels) write, seated on the right and on the left. He (the person) does not utter one word but that with him is an observer ready (to write it).»³

TESTIMONY OF THE BODY

A person's limbs and other body parts will also testify against him on Judgment Day.

Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that once the Prophet (ﷺ) smiled and then asked his companions, «هل تدرؤن مم أضحك؟» «Do you know

1 Soorat al-Mujaadalah 58:6.

2 Soorat al-Infitaar 82:10-12.

3 Soorat Qaaf 50:17-18.

why I smile?› They replied that they did not. So he (ﷺ) told them:

«من مخاطبة العبدِ ربّه. يقول: "يا رب! ألم تُجِرني من الظلمِ؟" يقول: "بلى." فيقول: "إني لا أُجيزُ على نفسي شاهداً إلاّ منّي." فيقول: "كفىٰ بنفسِكَ أليومَ عَلَيْكَ حَسِيبًا" ﴿الإسراء: ١٤﴾ وبالكرامِ الكاتبينَ شهوداً." فيُختمَ على فيه، ويُقال لأركانِهِ: "أنطِقِي." فتنتطقُ بأعمالِهِ، ثمَّ يُخلى بينَهُ وبينَ الكلامِ، فيقول: "بُعداً لكم وسُحقاً، فعنكنّ كنتُ أناضِلُ."»

‹I smile at the way a servant will argue with his Lord (on Judgment Day), saying, "My Lord, have You not promised that I will see no injustice on this Day?" Allaah will answer, "Yes, indeed." The servant will say, "I do not then accept any witness against me except from my own." Allaah will say, "«Sufficient is yourself against you this Day as accountant»¹, and sufficient are the noble recording angels as witnesses." His mouth will be then sealed, and his limbs will be commanded to speak, upon which they will tell about his deeds. He will then be allowed to speak, and he will say to his limbs, "Woe and destruction be yours! I was only trying to defend you."›²

How could a hand or foot speak? In the next life, Allaah (ﷻ) will make things happen differently from this life. Thus, some things will not need a tongue to speak.

Aside from the limbs, other body parts will also speak

1 Soorat al-Israa' 17:14.

2 Recorded by Muslim.

against a person during Judgment Day. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوْمَ تَشْهَدُ عَلَيْهِمْ أَلْسِنَتُهُمْ وَأَيْدِيهِمْ وَأَرْجُلُهُمْ بِمَا كَانُوا يَعْمَلُونَ﴾
 ﴿يَوْمَ تَشْهَدُ عَلَيْهِمْ أَلْسِنَتُهُمْ وَأَيْدِيهِمْ وَأَرْجُلُهُمْ بِمَا كَانُوا
 يَعْمَلُونَ﴾ يَوْمَ تَشْهَدُ عَلَيْهِمْ أَلْسِنَتُهُمْ وَأَيْدِيهِمْ وَأَرْجُلُهُمْ بِمَا كَانُوا
 يَعْمَلُونَ ﴿يَوْمَ تَشْهَدُ عَلَيْهِمْ أَلْسِنَتُهُمْ وَأَيْدِيهِمْ وَأَرْجُلُهُمْ بِمَا كَانُوا
 يَعْمَلُونَ﴾
 اللَّهُ هُوَ الْحَقُّ الْمُبِينُ ﴿النور ٢٤-٢٥﴾

«(Those who slander the believers will be severely punished) on the Day when their own tongues, hands, and feet will bear witness against them according to what they did. On that Day, Allaah will give them their fair judgment, and they will realize that Allaah is the Truth and the Manifest (in His Judgment).»¹

Exalted be Allaah! Even the tongue that, at one time, was used by its owner to lie, curse, backbite, and slander — even that flexible tool will not be under its owner's control on Judgment Day. Rather, it will be under full control of the One who created it, and will not hesitate to testify against its owner.

Allaah (ﷻ) also says:

﴿وَيَوْمَ يُحْشَرُ أَعْدَاءُ اللَّهِ إِلَى النَّارِ فَهُمْ يُوزَعُونَ﴾
 ﴿وَيَوْمَ يُحْشَرُ أَعْدَاءُ اللَّهِ إِلَى النَّارِ فَهُمْ يُوزَعُونَ﴾ حَتَّىٰ إِذَا
 مَا جَاءُوهَا شَهِدَ عَلَيْهِمْ سَمْعُهُمْ وَأَبْصَارُهُمْ وَجُلُودُهُمْ بِمَا
 كَانُوا يَعْمَلُونَ ﴿وَقَالُوا لِمَ لَجُودِمْ: لِمَ شَهِدْتُمْ عَلَيْنَا؟﴾
 قَالُوا: «أَنْطَقَنَا اللَّهُ الَّذِي أَنْطَقَ كُلَّ شَيْءٍ، وَهُوَ خَلَقَكُمْ أَوَّلَ
 مَرَّةٍ، وَإِلَيْهِ تُرْجَعُونَ.» ﴿فصلت ١٩-٢١﴾

«And (warn them of) the Day when the enemies of Allaah will be assembled before the Fire, and will be harshly driven forward in rows. Thus,

when they approach it, their hearing and their sight and their skin will testify against them, speaking of what they used to do. They will say to their skins, "Why have you testified against us?" They will reply, "Allaah, Who gives speech to all things, has caused us to speak; it is He who has created you the first time, and to Him you are (now) returned.»¹

TESTIMONY OF THE EARTH

The earth will also be a witness to what happened on it. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِذَا زُلْزِلَتِ الْأَرْضُ زِلْزَالَهَا ﴿۱﴾ وَأَخْرَجَتِ الْأَرْضُ أَثْقَالَهَا ﴿۲﴾
 وَقَالَ الْإِنْسَانُ: "مَا لَهَا؟" ﴿۳﴾ يَوْمَئِذٍ تُحَدِّثُ أَخْبَارَهَا ﴿۴﴾ بِأَنَّ
 رَبَّكَ أَوْحَىٰ لَهَا ﴿۵﴾ يَوْمَئِذٍ يَصْدُرُ النَّاسُ أَشْتَاتًا لِّيُرَوْا
 أَعْمَالَهُمْ ﴿۶﴾ فَمَنْ يَعْمَلْ مِثْقَالَ ذَرَّةٍ خَيْرًا يَرَهُ ﴿۷﴾ وَمَنْ يَعْمَلْ

مِثْقَالَ ذَرَّةٍ شَرًّا يَرَهُ ﴿۸﴾﴾ الزلزلة ۱-۸

«When the earth is shaken with its (utmost) earthquake, and the earth throws out its burdens, and the human being cries (with fear), "What is the matter with it?" – on that Day, it will declare its news (about all what happened over it of good or evil). (It will do that) because your Lord will have commanded it. On that Day, the people will proceed in scattered groups to be shown their deeds. So anyone who had done a small particle's weight of good will see it, and anyone who had done a small particle's weight of evil

1 Soorat Fussilat 41:19-21.

will see it.»¹

The Scales

THE MOST ACCURATE SCALES

During Judgment, the Scales will be erected for weighing the people's deeds in a most accurate manner. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَنَضَعُ الْمَوَازِينَ الْقِسْطَ لِيَوْمِ الْقِيَامَةِ، فَلَا تُظْلَمُ نَفْسٌ شَيْئًا، وَإِنْ كَانَ مِثْقَالَ حَبَّةٍ مِنْ حَرْدَلٍ أَتَيْنَا بِهَا، وَكَفَىٰ بِنَا حَٰسِبِينَ﴾ ﴿الأنبياء ٤٧﴾

«And We will set up the Scales of justice for the Day of Resurrection, so no soul will be shown any injustice. And even if there is a mustard seed's weight, We will bring it forth (to account). And sufficient are We as reckoners.»²

Even our smallest deeds that we may belittle in this life will be weighed in the Scales without neglect. This tells us that we should strive to avoid even the smallest bad deeds, and we should not belittle doing any good deed, even if it appears too small to be worth our while.

THE SCALES WILL BE HUGE

The Scales will be of enormous proportions, so as to accommodate large amounts of good deeds, like those of the prophets. Salmaan (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

﴿يُوضَعُ الْمِيزَانُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ، فَلَوْ وُزِنَ فِيهِ السَّمَوَاتُ وَالْأَرْضُ﴾

1 Soorat az-Zalzalah 99:1-8.

2 Soorat al-Anbiyaa' 21:47.

لَوَسِعَتْ. فَتَقُولُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ: "يَا رَبُّ، لِمَنْ يَزِنُ هَذَا؟" فَيَقُولُ
اللَّهُ تَعَالَى: "لِمَنْ شِئْتُ مِنْ خَلْقِي." فَتَقُولُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ: "سُبْحَانَكَ،
مَا عِبَدْنَاكَ حَقَّ عِبَادَتِكَ."»

«During Resurrection Day, the Scales will be set up such that, even if the heavens and earth were to be weighed in them, they would accommodate them. The angels will say, "Our Lord, whose deeds would be (so great as to be) weighed in these Scales?" Allaah (ﷻ) will reply, "Whoever's deeds I will from among my creation." The angels will then say, "Exalted are You! We surely have not worshipped you as much as You deserve."»¹

THE DEEDS WILL BE PUT IN THE TWO PANS

The Scales will be real and will have two pans. The people's deeds will materialize and will have weight. A person's good deeds will be placed in one pan and his evil deeds in the other. If his good deeds are heavier, he will enter *Jannah*; otherwise, he may enter Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



«يَوْمَ يَكُونُ النَّاسُ كَالْفَرَاشِ الْمَبْثُوثِ ◉ وَتَكُونُ الْجِبَالُ كَالْعِهْنِ
الْمَنْفُوشِ ◉ فَأَمَّا مَنْ ثَقُلَتْ مَوَازِينُهُ ◉ فَهُوَ فِي عِيشَةٍ رَاضِيَةٍ ◉
وَأَمَّا مَنْ خَفَّتْ مَوَازِينُهُ ◉ فَأُمُّهُ هَاوِيَةٌ ◉ وَمَا أَدْرَاكَ مَا هِيَ؟ ◉
نَارٌ حَامِيَةٌ ◉» القارعة ٤-١١

«It is the Day when people will be like moths,

1 Recorded by al-Haakim. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (as-Saheehah no. 941).

swarming in confusion, and the mountains will be like fluffed up wool. Then, as for him whose scales are heavy (with good deeds), he will be in a pleasant life. But as for him whose scales are light, his refuge will be an abyss; and what can make you know what that will be? An intensely hot Fire.»¹

We should strive to increase our good deeds so as to make them heavier in the pan of good deeds, and we should avoid sinning because sins would then weigh down the pan of bad deeds, making our pan of good deeds too light.

THINGS THAT MAKE THE SCALES HEAVY

The heaviest thing in the Scales is the true and pure belief in Allaah (ﷻ) and His Messenger (ﷺ). 'Abdullaah Bin 'Amr (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إن الله يستخلصُ رجلاً من أمتي على رؤوس الخلائق يومَ القيامةِ، فينشُرُ عليه تسعةً وتسعينَ سجلاً، كلَّ سَجَلٍ مثلُ مدِّ البصرِ، ثم يقول: "أئنكرُ من هذا شيئاً؟ أظلمَكَ كَتَبَتِي الحَافِظُونَ؟" فيقول: "لا يا ربِّ!" فيقول: "أفلكَ عذرٌ؟" فيقول: "لا يا ربِّ!" فيقول: "بلى، إنَّ لكَ عندنا حسنةً، وإِنَّه لا ظلمَ اليومَ." فتُخرِجُ بطاقةً فيها: "أشهد أن لا إله إلاَّ اللهُ، وأنَّ محمداً عبدهُ ورسوله." فيقول: "أحضرُ وزنَكَ." فيقول: "يا ربِّ، ما هذه البطاقةُ مع هذه السَّجَلاتِ؟" فيقول: "إنَّكَ لا تُظلمُ." فتوضعُ السَّجَلاتُ في كِفَّةٍ، والبطاقةُ في كِفَّةٍ، فطاشتِ السَّجَلاتُ وثقلتِ البطاقةُ، فلا يثقلُ مع اسمِ اللهِ شيءٌ.»

1 Soorat al-Qaari'ah 101:4-11.

«Indeed, on Resurrection Day, Allaah will single out a man in front of the creation, and will unfold for him ninety-nine records (of bad deeds), each record extending to the limit of the eyesight. Allaah will ask him, “Do you deny any of this? Were my recording scribes (the angels) unfair to you?” He will reply, “No, my Lord.” Allaah will ask him, “Do you have any excuse?” He will reply, “No, my Lord.” Allaah will say, “However, you have one good deed recorded with Us, and indeed, there is no injustice Today.” A card is then brought out that reads, “I bear witness that there is no true god except Allaah and that Muhammad is His Servant and Messenger.” Allaah will tell him, “Prepare your weights.” He will respond, “O my Lord, what would this card do against all these records?” Allaah will say, “You will not be shown any injustice.” When the records are placed in one pan and the card in the other, the records will rise and the card will outweigh them for, truly, nothing can outweigh Allaah’s name.»¹

This man had strong and pure belief in Allaah (ﷻ) and His Messenger. At the same time, he committed many sins that, in Allaah’s knowledge and mercy, did not add up to the *Shahaadah*’s weight. It is possible that his lack of good deeds was because he embraced Islaam shortly before he died². It is also possible that his sins were all small and minor, and that he had good deeds but they were unimportant compared to the *Shahaadah*. Allaah knows best.

-
- 1 Recorded by at-Tirmithi and Ibn Maajah. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaah* no. 5492).
 - 2 This would be similar to the case of the man who killed one hundred people and then embraced Islaam and died, which is discussed in the second part of this series: “Knowing the Angels”.

The next heaviest thing in the Scales is good manners. Aboo ad-Dardaa' (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أثقلُ شيءٍ في ميزانِ العبدِ يومَ القيامةِ الخُلُقُ الحسنُ.»

«On Resurrection Day, the heaviest thing in a servant's Scales are good manners.»¹

This should urge us to adorn ourselves with all sorts of good manners, such as truthfulness, respect to the elders, kindness to the parents and other people, patience, generosity, courage, chastity, and so on.

Furthermore, good deeds quickly increase the weight in our Scales, especially because a good deed is multiplied ten times or more. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«مَنْ جَاءَ بِالْحَسَنَةِ فَلَهُ عَشْرُ أَمْثَالِهَا، وَمَنْ جَاءَ بِالسَّيِّئَةِ فَلَا يُجْزَى إِلَّا مِثْلَهَا، وَهُمْ لَا يُظْلَمُونَ ﴿١٦٠﴾ الأَنْعَامُ

«Whoever comes with a good deed, he will have ten times as much; and whoever comes with an evil deed will not be recompensed except the like of it; and they will not be wronged.»²

Among the most important good deeds that can weigh down our Scales are statements that we use for praising Allaah. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«كلمتان خفيفتان على اللسان، ثقيلتان في الميزان، حبيبتان إلى الرحمن: "سبحان الله وبحمده؛ سبحان الله العظيم."»

1 Recorded by Aboo Daawood, Ahmad, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 876).

2 Soorat al-An'aam 6:160.

«There are two statements that are light on the tongue, heavy on the Scales, and beloved by the Most Merciful: “*Subhaan Allaahi wa-bihamdih* (Exalted is Allaah, and praise be to Him); *subhaan Allaah il-‘Azeem* (Exalted is Allaah the Great).»¹

THINGS THAT DO NOT WEIGH IN THE SCALES

There are, on the other hand, people who do many good deeds, but their deeds will not count in the hereafter, nor will they have any weight in the Scales. This is because they disbelieved in Allaah and did their deeds for other than His sake.

Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَقَدِمْنَا إِلَىٰ مَا عَمِلُوا مِنْ عَمَلٍ فَجَعَلْنَاهُ هَبَاءً مَّنثُورًا﴾ الفرقان ٢٣

«And We will approach the deeds they (the wicked) did and turn them into dispersed dust.»²

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿قُلْ: ”هَلْ نُنَبِّئُكُمْ بِالْأَخْسَرِينَ أَعْمَالًا ﴿١٠٣﴾ الَّذِينَ ضَلَّ سَعِيهُمُ فِي الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا، وَهُمْ يَحْسَبُونَ أَنَّهُمْ يُحْسِنُونَ صُنْعًا؟“ ﴿١٠٤﴾ أُولَٰئِكَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا بِبَيِّنَاتٍ رَبِّهِمْ وَلِقَائِهِ، فَحَبَّطَتْ أَعْمَالُهُمْ، فَلَا نُقِيمُ لَهُمْ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ وَزَنًا ﴿١٠٥﴾ ذَلِكَ جَزَاءُهُمْ جَهَنَّمَ بِمَا كَفَرُوا وَاتَّخَذُوا آيَاتِي وَرُسُلِي هُزُوعًا﴾ الكهف ١٠٦-١٠٣

«Say (O Muhammad), “Shall we inform you of the greatest losers as to their deeds, and whose

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

2 Soorat al-Furqaan 25:23.

effort is lost in the worldly life while they think they are accomplishing well?" They are those who disbelieve in their Lord's messages and in meeting Him, which made their deeds worthless, and We will not assign to them on Resurrection Day any weight. That is their recompense: Hell for their disbelief and for taking My messages and My messengers in ridicule.»¹

The Records

RECORDS OF THE RIGHTEOUS



Each person will receive his book of records in his hand. For the righteous, they will receive their book in their right hand, which will indicate their success and that they will enter *Jannah*. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَأَمَّا مَنْ أُوتِيَ كِتَابَهُ بِيَمِينِهِ فَيَقُولُ: "هَآؤُمْ، أَقْرَأُوا كِتَابِيَةَ ﴿١٩﴾
 إِنِّْي ظَنَنْتُ أَنِّي مُلْقٍ حِسَابِيَةَ." ﴿٢٠﴾ فَهُوَ فِي عَيْشَةٍ رَّاضِيَةٍ ﴿٢١﴾
 فِي جَنَّةٍ عَالِيَةٍ ﴿٢٢﴾ قُطُوفُهَا دَانِيَةٌ ﴿٢٣﴾ "كُلُوا وَاشْرَبُوا هَنِيئًا بِمَا
 أَسْلَفْتُمْ فِي الْأَيَّامِ الْأَخْلَآئَةِ." ﴿٢٤﴾﴾ الحاقة ١٩-٢٤

«As for him whose record will be placed in his right hand, he will say, "Come (O people) and read my record! Indeed, I knew that (one day) I would have to face my account." So he will be in a pleasant life, in an elevated garden, its fruits within easy reach. (Those who are thus blessed will be told,) "Eat and drink in satisfaction in

1 Soorat al-Kahf 18:103:106.

return for what you put forth in the days past.”»¹

RECORDS OF THE WRONGDOERS

As for the wrongdoers, they will receive their book in their left hand and from behind their back. This will indicate their failure and that Hell will be their abode. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَأَمَّا مَنْ أُوتِيَ كِتَابَهُ بِشِمَالِهِ، فَيَقُولُ: "يَلَيْتَنِي لَمْ أُوتَ كِتَابِيَةَ ۖ وَلَمْ أَدْرِ مَا حِسَابِيَةَ ۖ يَلَيْتَهَا كَانَتْ الْقَاضِيَةَ ۖ مَا أَغْنَىٰ عَنِّي مَالِيهِ ۖ هَلَكَ عَنِّي سُلْطَانِيهِ." ۗ﴾ "حُدُوهُ فَعْلُوهُ ۖ ثُمَّ الْجَحِيمَ صَلَّوهُ ۖ ثُمَّ فِي سِلْسِلَةٍ ذَرْعُهَا سَبْعُونَ ذِرَاعًا فَاسْلُكُوهُ ۖ إِنَّهُ كَانَ لَا يُؤْمِنُ بِاللَّهِ الْعَظِيمِ ۖ وَلَا يَحِضُّ عَلَىٰ طَعَامِ الْمِسْكِينِ ۖ فَلَيسَ لَهُ الْيَوْمَ هَاهُنَا حَمِيمٌ ۖ وَلَا طَعَامٌ إِلَّا مِنْ غِسْلِينٍ ۖ لَا يَأْكُلُهُ إِلَّا الْخَاطِئُونَ." ۖ﴾ الحاقة ٢٥-٣٧

«But as for him whose record will be placed in his left hand, he will say, "Oh, I wish I had never been shown my record, and had never known what is my account. I wish it (my death) had been the end of me! Of no help to me is all that I possessed, and gone from me is my power of argument." (The command will then be issued,) "Seize him and shackle him, then shove him into Hellfire, then set him into a chain whose length is seventy cubits². Indeed, he did not believe in Allaah, the Most Great, nor did he encourage (himself and others) to feed the needy. So, this Day, he has no friend, nor any food —

1 Soorat al-Haaqqah 69:19-24.

2 A cubit is an old measure of length that corresponds to about 50 cm. (20 in.).

except the filth that only the sinners eat.”»¹

Allaah (ﷻ) also says:

﴿فَأَمَّا مَنْ أُوتِيَ كِتَابَهُ بِيَمِينِهِ ﴿٧﴾ فَسَوْفَ يُحَاسَبُ حِسَابًا يَسِيرًا ﴿٨﴾
وَيَنْقَلِبُ إِلَىٰ أَهْلِهِ مَسْرُورًا ﴿٩﴾ وَأَمَّا مَنْ أُوتِيَ كِتَابَهُ وَرَاءَ ظَهْرِهِ ﴿١٠﴾
فَسَوْفَ يَدْعُوا ثُبُورًا ﴿١١﴾ وَيَصْلَىٰ سَعِيرًا ﴿١٢﴾﴾ الانشقاق ٧-١٢

«As for him who is given his record in his right hand, he will be given an easy judgment, and will turn joyfully to his people. But as for him who is given his record behind his back, he will wish for complete destruction, and will burn in the blazing flame.»²

The Prophet's Pond

During the long stand of Assembly and Judgment, the people will be hot and thirsty. A cool and sweet drink will be most welcome. Sure enough, such a drink will be offered — only to true believers.

Streams from *Jannah* will flow to the plane of Assembly, filling a *hawd* (or pond) of immense proportions. According to some scholars, this pond will draw its water from al-Kawthar river that Allaah granted to His Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ).

Allaah (ﷻ) will set the Prophet (ﷺ) in charge of this Pond, giving him instructions to only allow true believers to drink from it. Anyone who drinks from it will never be thirsty again. In what follows, we only present a few of the many *hadeeths* describing the Prophet's (ﷺ) Pond.

'Abdullaah Bin 'Amr (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

1 Soorat al-Haaqqah 69:25-37.

2 Soorat al-Inshiqaaq 84:7-12.

«حوضي مسيرة شهر، وزواياه سواء، ماؤه أبيض من
اللبن، وريحه أطيب من المسك، وكيزائه كنجوم
السماء، من يشرب منها فلا يظمأ أبداً.»

«My Pond is as wide as a month's travel. Its sides are equal (i.e., it is square), its water is whiter than milk, its smell sweeter than musk, its cups like the stars of the sky (in number). Whoever drinks from it once will never be thirsty thereafter.»¹

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said about his Pond:

«لهو أشدُّ بياضاً من الثلج، وأحلى من العسل باللبن،
ولأنيته أكثر من عدد النجوم، وإني لأصدُّ الناس عنه
كما يصدُّ الرجل إبل الناس عن حوضه.»

«Indeed, it is whiter than snow and sweeter than honey with milk. And indeed, its cups are more than the stars in the sky. And indeed, I will be averting some people² from approaching it like a man would avert straying camels from his water.»

On hearing this, the *Sahaabah* asked the Prophet (ﷺ), “Will you then be able to recognize us?” He replied:

«نعم، تردون عليَّ غراً مُحَجَّلِينَ من أثر الوضوء.»

«Yes, you will come to me with shiny faces and

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 Those will be the hypocrites and the apostates.

limbs from the trace of *wudoo'* (ablution).»¹

Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said about his Pond:

«يَعْتُ فِيهِ مِيزَابَانِ، يَمْدَانِهِ مِنَ الْجَنَّةِ،

أَحَدُهُمَا مِنْ ذَهَبٍ وَالْآخَرُ مِنْ وَرَقٍ.»

«Two spouts from *Jannah*, one made of gold and the other of silver, pour into it.»²

Thawbaan (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said about his Pond:

«تَرَى فِيهِ أَبَارِيقَ الذَّهَبِ وَالْفِضَّةِ كَعَدَدِ نَجْمِ السَّمَاءِ»

«You will see in it cups of gold and silver like the amount of stars in the sky.»³

Sahl Bin Sa'd (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنِّي فَرَطُكُمْ عَلَى الْحَوْضِ، مَنْ مَرَّ عَلَيَّ شَرِبَ، وَمَنْ شَرِبَ لَمْ يَظْمَأْ

أَبَدًا. لَيَرِدَنَّ عَلَيَّ أَقْوَامٌ أَعْرَفُهُمْ وَيَعْرِفُونَنِي، ثُمَّ يُحَالُ بَيْنِي وَبَيْنَهُمْ.»

«Indeed, I will precede you to the Pond. Whoever passes by me will drink, and whoever drinks will never be thirsty after that. There will come to me (to drink) people⁴ that I knew and they knew me, but they will be taken away (without drinking).»⁵

May Allaah, with His bounty and generosity, make us among

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by Muslim.

2 This *hadeeth* was recorded by Muslim.

3 This *hadeeth* was recorded by Muslim.

4 Those will be the hypocrites from the Prophet's (ﷺ) time.

5 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

those who quench their thirst from this Pond along with the Prophet (ﷺ) and his Companions (رضي الله عنهم).

The *Siraat*

Siraat means a clear path. In this life, it refers to the true religion of Islaam. Allaah (ﷻ) instructs us to say:

﴿أَهْدِنَا الصِّرَاطَ الْمُسْتَقِيمَ﴾ الفاتحة ٦

«Guide us (O Allaah) to the straight Path.»¹

In the next life, *Siraat* refers to a bridge that will hang over Hell. All those who claim to be true believers in Allaah will have to cross this bridge — even the prophets. This will happen near the end of Judgment, after the followers of false gods and religions will have already been taken to Hell.

Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) said:

«إذا كان يومُ القيامةِ أذن مؤذنٌ: "لِيَتَّبِعْ كُلُّ أُمَّةٍ ما كانت تعبدُ." فلا يبقى أحدٌ كان يعبدُ غيرَ اللهِ من الأصنامِ والأنصابِ إلا يتساقطون في النارِ. حتى إذا لم يبقَ إلا من كان يعبدُ اللهَ - من برِّ وفاجرٍ - أتاهم ربُّ العالمين فقال: "فماذا تنتظرون؟" فيقولون: "هذا مكائنا حتى يأتينا ربُّنا." فيقول: "هل بينكم وبينه آيةٌ تعرفونه؟" فيقولون: "نعم." فيكشفُ عن ساقِ، فلا يبقى من كان يسجدُ لله من تلقاءِ نفسه إلا أذن الله له بالسجودِ. ولا يبقى من كان يسجدُ اتقاءً ورياءً إلا جعل الله ظهره طبقةً واحدةً، كلما أراد أن يسجدَ خرَّ على قفاه.»

1 Soorat al-Faatihah 1:6.

«During Judgment Day, an announcer will call, "Let every people follow what they used to worship." Thus, no one who used to worship other than Allaah, of idols or symbols, but will fall into the Fire. When there will remain only those who worshiped Allaah — whether rightly or wrongly, the Lord of the Creation will come to them and say, "What are you awaiting?" They will reply, "We will remain in this place until our Lord comes to us." He will ask them, "Is there between you and Him a sign that you can recognize?" They will reply, "Yes." The Lord will then show His leg ¹. There will be no person who used to willingly make *sujood* to Allaah but that Allaah will allow him to make *sujood*. And no person who used to make *sujood* for deception or show-off but that Allaah will turn his back into one block so that he would fall on his back every time he attempts to make *sujood*.»

Right after this, the *Siraat* will be set up over Hell, as a final means of eliminating the hypocrites and imposters. The Prophet (ﷺ) continued:

«ثُمَّ يُضْرَبُ الصِّرَاطُ بَيْنَ ظَهْرَانِي جَهَنَّمَ، فَأَكُونُ أَوَّلَ مَنْ يَجُوزُ
 مِنَ الرَّسُلِ بِأَمْتِهِ، وَفِي جَهَنَّمَ كَلَالِيْبٌ، لَا يَعْلَمُ قَدْرَ عِظْمِهَا
 إِلَّا اللَّهُ، تَخْطَفُ النَّاسَ بِأَعْمَالِهِمْ. فَيَمْرُؤُ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ كَطَرْفِ
 الْعَيْنِ وَكَالْبَرْقِ وَكَالرِّيحِ وَكَالطَّيْرِ وَكَأَجَاوِيدِ الْخَيْلِ وَالرِّكَابِ
 فَنَاجٍ مُسَلَّمٌ، وَمُخَدَّوشٌ مُرْسَلٌ، وَمُكَرَّدَسٌ فِي نَارِ جَهَنَّمَ.»

1 All of Allaah's authentic qualities and actions must be accepted without suspending their meaning or likening Him to His creation. This is discussed in detail in the first book of this series: "Knowing Allaah".

«The *Siraat* will then be extended over the two ends of Hell. I will be the first messenger to cross it with his followers. In Hell (to the sides of the *Siraat*), there will be hooks that only Allaah knows the extent of their size. They will snatch the people according to their deeds. Some people will pass as fast as an eye's blink, others like lightning, others like wind, others like birds, others like good horses or camels, and so on. Some people will pass secure and unharmed, others will be scratched but released, and others will be rounded up in the Hellfire.»¹

The *Siraat*, then, is a bridge over Hell, bordered with huge iron hooks that snatch the sinful. It will be sharp and slippery. Aboo Sa'eed (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) described it as:

«مَدْحَضَةٌ مَزَلَّةٌ.»

«A path that causes slipping and tripping.»²

Those who follow the *Siraat* of Islaam well in this life will be able to cross the *Siraat* of the Hereafter easily. As for a wrongdoer, the greater that he deviated from Islaam, the harder that it will be for him to cross it. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«حتى يجيء الرجلُ فلا يستطيع السيرَ إلا زحفاً.»

«There will even be some people (on the *Siraat*) who will not be able to move except to crawl.»³

1 This is a combination of two *hadeeths* that were recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others from Aboo Hurayrah and Aboo Sa'eed al-Khudree (رضي الله عنه).

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

3 Recorded by Muslim.

And Aboo Sa'eed (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«حتى يمر آخرهم يُسحبُ سحْباً.»

«The last among them (on the *Siraat*) will only pass it by being dragged along.»¹

Those who follow the light of truth in this life will be given a bright light in the next life that will enable them to cross the *Siraat*. The hypocrites, on the other hand, will be denied the light and doomed in Hell because they only pretended to follow the truth in this life. Jaabir (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ويعطى كل إنسان منهم منافق أو مؤمن نوراً، ثم يتبعونه، وعلى جسر جهنم، كلاليب وحسك تأخذ من شاء الله، ثم يُطفأ نور المنافقين، ثم ينجو المؤمنون.»

«Every person, whether hypocrite or believer, will then be given a light that he will use to see his way (on the *Siraat*). There will be hooks and thorns on the Bridge of Hell that will snatch whomever Allaah wills. The light of the hypocrites will later be extinguished, so that only (true) believers will be saved.»²

Various Intercessions

INTERCESSION OF THE PROPHETS AND THE ANGELS

Intercession with Allaah can only be done by those whom Allaah (ﷻ) approves, and for a cause that He approves, as

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

2 Recorded by Muslim.

He (ﷺ) says:

«مَنْ ذَا الَّذِي يَشْفَعُ عِنْدَهُ إِلَّا بِإِذْنِهِ؟» البقرة ٢٥٥

«Who is he that can intercede with Him except with His permission?»¹

We have seen this in the Prophet's (ﷺ) Major Intercession. In addition, the Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ) will be granted several forms of intercession for his followers during Judgment Day.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«لكلّ نبيّ دعوةٌ مستجابةٌ في أمّته، فتعجّل كلّ نبيّ
دعوته، وإني خبأتُ دعوتي شفاعةً لأمتي يوم القيامة.»

«Every prophet is granted an acceptable *du'aa* for his people, and each prophet has already made his *du'aa*. But indeed, I saved my *du'aa* to intercede for my followers on Judgment Day.»²

And in Aboo Hurayrah's (رضي الله عنه) *hadeeth* about the Major Intercession, the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«فأرفعُ رأسي، فأقولُ: "يا ربّ، أمّتي، أمّتي." فيقالُ: "يا محمّدُ،
أَدْخِلِ الْجَنَّةَ مِنْ أُمَّتِكَ مَنْ لَا حِسَابَ عَلَيْهِ مِنَ الْبَابِ الْأَيْمَنِ مِنْ
أَبْوَابِ الْجَنَّةِ، وَهُمْ شُرَكَاءُ النَّاسِ فِيمَا سِوَى ذَلِكَ مِنَ الْأَبْوَابِ.»

«I will then raise my head and say, "O my Lord, my *Ummah*, my *Ummah*." And it will be said (to me), "O Muhammad, admit into *Jannah* those from your *Ummah* who have nothing to account for — admit them through the far right gate of

1 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:255.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

***Jannah*, and they may also enter with other people through the remaining gates.”¹**

Similarly, each prophet will intercede with Allaah on behalf of his followers, and the angels will also intercede for the believers. Aboo Sa’eed (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«فيقول الله: ”شَفَعَتِ الْمَلَائِكَةُ، وَشَفَعَ النَّبِيُّونَ...“»

«Allaah will say, “The angels have interceded, and the prophets have interceded ...»²

INTERCESSION OF THE BELIEVERS

The believers who pass the *Siraat* will intercede on behalf of other believers who will have entered Hell for their sins. In the above-cited *hadeeth* of Aboo Sa’eed, the Prophet (ﷺ) continued:

«حتى إذا خَلَصَ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ مِنَ النَّارِ يَنَاشِدُونَ اللَّهَ لِإِخْوَانِهِمُ الَّذِينَ فِي النَّارِ، يَقُولُونَ: ”رَبَّنَا! كَانُوا يَصُومُونَ مَعَنَا، وَيُصَلُّونَ مَعَنَا، وَيُحْجُّونَ مَعَنَا.“ فيقالُ لَهُمْ: ”أَخْرِجُوا مَنْ عَرَفْتُمْ.“ فيُخْرِجُونَ خَلْقًا كَثِيرًا.»

«When the believers are beyond the Fire, they will plead with Allaah on behalf of their brothers who will then be in the Fire, saying, “Our Lord, they used to fast with us, pray with us, and go to *hajj* (pilgrimage) with us.” So they will be told, “Take out whomever you can recognize of them.” Thus they will take out (of the Fire) a large number of people.»³

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

ALLAAH'S INTERCESSION

Allaah (ﷻ), out of his unbounded mercy, will also intercede for (i.e., forgive) some believers who will have been admitted to Hell for their major sins!

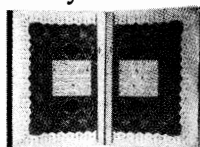
In the above *hadeeth* of Aboo Sa'eed, the Prophet (ﷺ) added:

«يقول الله: "شَفَعَتِ الْمَلَائِكَةُ، وَشَفَعَ النَّبِيُّونَ، وَشَفَعَ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ، وَلَمْ يَبْقَ إِلَّا أَرْحَمُ الرَّاحِمِينَ." "فَيَقْبِضُ قَبْضَةً مِنَ النَّارِ، فَيُخْرِجُ مِنْهَا قَوْمًا لَمْ يَعْمَلُوا خَيْرًا قَطُّ. فَيَقُولُ أَهْلُ الْجَنَّةِ: "هَؤُلَاءِ عُنُقَاءُ الرَّحْمَنِ."»

«Allaah will then say, "The angels have interceded, the prophets have interceded, and the believers have interceded. Only the Most Merciful of the merciful is left." So He will take a handful of people from the Fire, thus removing from it people who never did any good. The people of *Jannah* will later call them, "The Ones Freed by the Most Merciful".»¹

Those whom Allaah will remove from the Fire are people who only had the basic belief in their hearts, but never implemented it with any good deeds. As for those who had not the tiniest trace of belief, they will remain permanently in Hell.

THE QUR'AAN'S INTERCESSION



The Qur'aan will also intercede for the believers who recited and memorized it in the first life. Aboo Umaamah (رضي الله عنه) said that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«اقرأوا القرآن، فإنه يأتي يوم القيامة شفيعاً لأصحابه. اقرأوا»

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

الزهرانين: البقرة وآل عمران، فإنهما يأتيان يوم القيامة كأنهما غمامتان، أو كأنهما فرقان من طير صواف، يُحاجَّان عن أصحابهما.»

«Recite the Qur'aan, because it will come on the Day of Resurrection interceding for its reciters. Recite the two glorious *soorahs*, *al-Baqarah* and *Aal 'Imraan*, because they will come on the Day of Resurrection like two clouds, or two flocks of birds flying with their wings spread, arguing on behalf of their reciters.»¹

The Qur'aan's intercession will also benefit in raising a believers's position in *Jannah*. 'Abdullaah Bin 'Amr (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يقال لصاحب القرآن: "اقرأ وارتق، ورتل كما كنت ترتل في الدنيا، فإن منزلتك عند آخر آية كنت تقرؤها.»

«A reciter (and memorizer) of the Qur'aan will be told, "Read and rise, and recite as you did in the first life. Your final position will surely be according to the last *aayah* that you used to read.»²

The Bridge

After crossing the *Siraat*, the believers will be very close to the gates of *Jannah*. However, they will not be able to enter it as yet. First, they will have to settle any small resentment or dislike that they may have toward other believers. They will do this on

1 Recorded by Muslim and Ahmad.

2 Recorded by Ahmad and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ul-Jaami'* no. 8122).

another bridge that leads straight to *Jannah*. Aboo Sa'eed al-Khudree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِذَا خَلَصَ الْمُؤْمِنُونَ مِنَ النَّارِ، حُبِسُوا بِقَنْطَرَةٍ بَيْنَ الْجَنَّةِ
وَالنَّارِ، فَيَتَقَاصُونَ مَظَالِمَ كَانَتْ بَيْنَهُمْ فِي الدُّنْيَا، حَتَّى
إِذَا تُقُوا وَهَدَّبُوا، أُذِنَ لَهُمْ بِدُخُولِ الْجَنَّةِ. فَوَالَّذِي نَفْسُ مُحَمَّدٍ
بِيَدِهِ، لَأَأْخِذُهُمْ بِمَسْكِنِهِ فِي الْجَنَّةِ أَدْلُ بِمَنْزِلِهِ كَانَ فِي الدُّنْيَا.»

«After the believers are secure from the Fire, they will be held on a bridge between *Jannah* and Hell. They will then settle some grievances that happened among them in the first life. Once they are purified and rectified, they will be permitted to enter *Jannah*. By the One in whose hand is Muhammad's soul, they will be able to find their house in *Jannah* more easily than they used to find their house in the first life.»¹

We are not told how will they settle their grievances. Would it be with the angels' supervision? Would they agree on exchanging favors in *Jannah*? Allaah knows best. But there will surely be an agreeable settlement that will leave no hard feelings in anyone's heart, and they will all be ready to enter *Jannah* as loving brothers and friends. May Allaah (ﷻ) make us among those who will safely reach that stage, *aameen*.

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

Questions and Exercises



1. In the following table, check all true statements (41 points):

	Statement	✓
a	The Judgment will be done by Allaah alone.	
b	During Judgment, some of our secrets will remain hidden from everyone.	
c	On Judgment Day, the Prophet (ﷺ) will be the chief of all people.	
d	The Major Intercession will be done by Aadam.	
e	Even before he died, the Prophet (ﷺ) knew how he would praise Allaah in the next life.	
f	Allaah (ﷻ) is the fastest of all judges.	
g	Transgressions among animals will be settled.	
h	On Judgment Day, thousands of angels will bear the Throne.	
i	On Judgment Day, the angels will come in ranks.	
j	On Judgment Day, the people will be lined up in rows before Allaah.	
k	During Judgment, the people will have friendly conversations with their old friends.	
l	A person's book of records will contain the important and big matters but will leave out petty issues.	
m	Some people will manage to hide from Judgment.	

	Statement	✓
n	Some people will carry extra weights in addition to their own burden.	
o	Some people will help their friends in carrying their burdens.	
p	People will care more about themselves than about their close relatives.	
q	A disbeliever would wish to sacrifice all people to save himself.	
r	Allaah will ask us how we used His favors.	
s	The first thing to be settled among people is blood.	
t	During Judgment, we will first be asked about our fasting.	
u	It will be a good sign for a person if his account is audited.	
v	During Judgment, Allaah will only speak to the believers.	
w	On Resurrection Day, some sinful individuals will be denied Allaah's merciful look.	
x	The only currency on Judgment Day is the <i>Deenaar</i> .	
y	Some people with loads of good deeds will go to Hell.	
z	During Judgment, Allaah will cover some believers' secrets.	
A	Allaah will expose the disbelievers in front of all the creation.	
B	Some people may be able to appeal Allaah's Judgment.	

	Statement	✓
C	Light scales are better than heavy scales on Judgment Day.	
D	During Judgment, a card may sometimes be heavier than many books of bad records.	
E	Those who receive their book of records in the right hand will be most happy.	
F	Those who receive their book of records in the left hand will get a second chance.	
G	Those who receive their book of records behind their back will be miserable.	
H	Some hypocrites will drink from the Prophet's Pond.	
I	All believers will quickly cross the <i>Siraat</i> .	
J	The disbelievers will be taken to the Fire before the <i>Siraat</i> .	
K	The hypocrites will make <i>sujood</i> with the believers.	
L	The hypocrites will have just enough light to cross the <i>Siraat</i> .	
M	After the <i>Siraat</i> , the believers will still need to clear their hearts before they enter <i>Jannah</i> .	
N	Hell will be brought to view prior to starting the Judgment.	
O	Satan will stand by his followers to the end.	
P	We can always be sure that the disbelievers that we know will end up in Hell.	

2. Mention and explain four witnesses that will testify against a person in the hereafter: (8 points)

Witness	Description
1	
2	
3	
4	

3. Mention and briefly explain the five things about which we will definitely be asked during Judgment: (10 points):

Item	Brief Explanation
1	
2	
3	
4	
5	

4. Mention and briefly describe the three types of people who will first be thrown into Hell: (6 points):

Type	Brief Description
1	
2	
3	

5. Mention four qualities of the Scales of Judgment: (4 points)

1	3
2	4

6. Mention and explain five types of intercession during Judgment Day: (8 points)

Type	Description
1	
2	
3	
4	
5	

7. Mention eight qualities of the Prophet's (ﷺ) Pond: (8 points)

1	5
2	6
3	7
4	8

8. Mention four qualities of the Bridge over Hell: (4 points)

1	3
2	4

9. Mention four things that will be heavy on the Scales (4 points)

1	3
2	4

10. Mention seven individuals that Allaah will not speak to, look at, or purify during Resurrection: (7 points)

1	5
2	6
3	7
4	

CHAPTER 4

PARADISE

Introducing *Jannah*

WHAT IS *JANNAH*?

Jannah is the spacious and magnificent place that Allaah (ﷻ) prepared for His servants who believe in Him and follow His commands. It is a reward for their truthful faith and righteous actions. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَسَارِعُوا إِلَىٰ مَغْفِرَةٍ مِّن رَّبِّكُمْ وَجَنَّةٍ عَرْضُهَا السَّمَاوَاتُ
وَالْأَرْضُ أُعِدَّتْ لِلْمُتَّقِينَ﴾ آل عمران ١٣٣

«Hasten to forgiveness from your Lord and a Garden as wide as the heavens and earth, prepared for the pious.»¹

When we think of *Jannah*, we think of a magnificent and peaceful place filled with many nice things to see, eat, drink, smell, and enjoy; a place where a person is free from worries, hardships, and aging; a place where a person gets whatever he desires, and there is no end to what he can have.

In this chapter, we explore some of the information about *Jannah* that is contained in the texts of the Qur'aan and Sunnah. This should increase our longing for *Jannah* and make us implore Allaah earnestly to admit us into it, *aameen*.

Literally, "*Jannah*" means "Garden", and is sometimes translated as "Paradise". It is the great Garden that contains

1 Soorat Aal 'Imraan 3:133.

numerous smaller gardens for the believers.

THE CREATION OF *JANNAH*

Allaah (ﷻ) created *Jannah* before he created people. The first person to ever see it was the angel Jibreel (ﷺ). Allaah (ﷻ) first showed Jibreel *Jannah* in its true beauty and glory. He then showed it to him after veiling it with distractions that blur most people's vision.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«لَمَّا خَلَقَ اللهُ الْجَنَّةَ قَالَ: "يَا جِبْرِيلُ، اذْهَبْ فَانظُرْ إِلَيْهَا." فَذَهَبَ فَنظَرَ إِلَيْهَا وَإِلَى مَا أَعَدَّ اللهُ لِأَهْلِهَا فِيهَا، ثُمَّ جَاءَ فَقَالَ: "أَيُّ رَبِّ، وَعِزَّتِكَ لَا يَسْمَعُ بِهَا أَحَدٌ إِلَّا دَخَلَهَا." ثُمَّ حَقَّهَا بِالْمَكَارِهِ، ثُمَّ قَالَ: "يَا جِبْرِيلُ، اذْهَبْ فَانظُرْ إِلَيْهَا." فَذَهَبَ فَنظَرَ إِلَيْهَا ثُمَّ جَاءَ فَقَالَ: "أَيُّ رَبِّ، وَعِزَّتِكَ لَقَدْ خَشِيتُ أَلَّا يَدْخُلَهَا أَحَدٌ."»

«When Allaah created *Jannah*, He told Jibreel, "O Jibreel, go look at it." Looking at what Allaah has prepared in it for its dwellers, Jibreel came back and said, "O my Lord, by Your glory, no one who hears of it but will enter it."

So Allaah surrounded *Jannah* with difficulties and then told Jibreel, "O Jibreel, now go look at it." After looking at it, Jibreel came back and said, "O my Lord, by Your glory, I am afraid that none will be able to enter it."»¹

This *hadeeth* tells us that *Jannah* is so delightful and marvelous that no person in his right senses would ever want to

1 Recorded by Aboo Daawood, at-Tirmithi, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaat* no. 5625).

miss it. Yet, it will be hard to enter it because of the struggles and hardships that surround it. The hardships dispel most people from this beautiful place — except for those who have clear sight and ability to distinguish between truth and falsehood.

Description of *Jannah*

ITS NAMES

Many descriptive names are used in the Qur'aan and Sunnah to refer to *Jannah*. The following are some examples:

- * *Al-Jannah* (the Garden) ¹
- * *Jannat ul-Ma'waa* (the Garden of Resort) ²
- * *Jannaat 'Adn* (the Gardens of Residence) ³
- * *Jannaat ul-Firdaws* (the Gardens of Paradise) ⁴
- * *Jannat ul-Khuld* (the Garden of Eternity) ⁵
- * *Jannaat un-Na'eem* (the Gardens of Delight) ⁶
- * *Daar us-Salaam* (the Dwelling of Peace) ⁷
- * *Daar ul-Muqaamah* (the Dwelling of Residence) ⁸

These names are descriptive because they describe various aspects of the *Jannah's* pleasures that we will discuss below.

1 As in Soorat Maryam 19:63.

2 As in Soorat un-Najm 53:15.

3 As in Soorat Maryam 19:61.

4 As in Soorat al-Kahf 18:107.

5 As in Soorat al-Furqaan 25:15.

6 As in Soorat Luqmaan 31:8.

7 As in Soorat al-An'aam 6:127.

8 As in Soorat Faatir 35:35.

IT IS BEYOND IMAGINATION

Nothing in *Jannah* is similar to what is in this world. *Jannah's* magnificence is beyond our perception or comprehension. It is described for us with familiar names and terms to enable us to imagine some of its grandeur. But, in reality, it is far greater than our wildest dreams.

The luxuries of *Jannah* are such that no human eye has seen, no ear has heard, and no heart can imagine. Therefore, in what follows, we can only see very little glimpses from the bright beams of *Jannah*, hoping and imploring Allaah (ﷻ) to make us see it in its full glory in the next life, *ameen*.

Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَلَا تَعْلَمُ نَفْسٌ مَّا أُخْفِيَ لَهُم مِّن قُرَّةِ أَعْيُنٍ
جَزَاءً بِمَا كَانُوا يَعْمَلُونَ﴾ السجدة ١٧

«“No soul knows what has been reserved for them of comfort for eyes as reward for what they used to do.»¹

Abu Hurayrah reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said that Allaah (ﷻ) said:

«“أعددتُ لعبادي الصالحين ما لا عين رأت،
ولا أذن سمعت، ولا خطرَ على قلب بشرٍ.”»

«“I have prepared for My righteous servants what no eye has seen, no ear has heard, and what has not occurred to a human heart.”»²

We can be certain that Allaah will fulfill His promise, and

1 Soorat as-Sajdah 32:17.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

that His mercy and generosity are beyond limits. Great indeed will His reward be for the deserving believers; so let us compete to be among them.

ITS ETERNITY

Jannah will last eternally. There will be no end to its glory, its pleasures, or its dwellers. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَأَمَّا الَّذِينَ سَعِدُوا ففِي الْجَنَّةِ خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا مَا دَامَتِ السَّمَوَاتُ
وَالْأَرْضُ إِلَّا مَا شَاءَ رَبُّكَ عَطَاءٌ غَيْرَ مَجْذُودٍ﴾ هود ١٠٨

«As for those who will have been blessed with happiness, they will be granted *Jannah*, abiding therein as long as the heavens and the earth endure, except what your Lord should will — an uninterrupted gift.»¹

According to scholars, the exception in this *ayah* refers to non-eternal beings that Allaah will create for the pleasure of the people of *Jannah*, such as birds for eating, game animals, etc. These, obviously, will not remain in *Jannah* forever.

Aboo Sa'eed and Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنهما) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إذا دخل أهل الجنة الجنة ينادي منادٍ: "إِنَّ لَكُمْ أَنْ تَحْيُوا فَلَا تَمُوتُوا
أَبَدًا، وَإِنَّ لَكُمْ أَنْ تَصِحُّوا فَلَا تَسْقُمُوا أَبَدًا، وَإِنَّ لَكُمْ أَنْ تَشْبُوا فَلَا
تَهْرَمُوا أَبَدًا، وَإِنَّ لَكُمْ أَنْ تَنَعَمُوا فَلَا تَبْأَسُوا أَبَدًا.»

«After the people of *Jannah* enter it, a caller (from Allaah) will announce, "Indeed, you are promised now to live and never die, to be

1 Soorat Hood 11:108.

healthy and never weaken, to be youthful and never age, and to be happy and never grieve.”¹

Thus, Allaah (ﷻ) will grant the believers everlasting happiness as a reward for their long-lasting, firm, and unbending faith in Him.

‘Abdullaah Bin ‘Umar (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِذَا صَارَ أَهْلُ الْجَنَّةِ إِلَى الْجَنَّةِ، وَأَهْلُ النَّارِ إِلَى النَّارِ، جِيءَ بِالْمَوْتِ حَتَّى يُجْعَلَ بَيْنَ الْجَنَّةِ وَالنَّارِ، ثُمَّ يُذَبِّحُ، ثُمَّ يَنَادِي مُنَادٍ: "يَا أَهْلَ الْجَنَّةِ، خَلُودٌ لَكُمْ، يَا أَهْلَ النَّارِ، خَلُودٌ لَكُمْ." فَيَزِدَادُ أَهْلَ الْجَنَّةِ فَرِحًا إِلَى فَرِحِهِمْ، وَيَزِدَادُ أَهْلَ النَّارِ حُزْنًا إِلَى حُزْنِهِمْ.»

«When the people of *Jannah* will have entered it, and the people of the Fire will have entered it, death will be brought (in the form of a horned ram), will be placed between *Jannah* and Hell, and will then be slain. An announcement will be made, "O people of *Jannah*, you will live eternally without death, and, O people of Hell, you will live eternally without death." The people of *Jannah* will be even more happy (to hear this), and the people of the Fire will be even more sorrowful.»²

Therefore, when death, materialized as a ram, will be slain in the sight of everyone, no doubt will remain in anyone's heart as to the eternity of the new life.



1 Recorded by Muslim.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and Ahmad.

ITS GATES

Jannah has gates through which the believers will enter. The width of each gate is the distance of forty years of travel, and a Day will come when they will all be crowded with people.¹ Once inside, the believers will never come out again, nor will they ever wish to! That will be the end of all their worries and concerns. Upon entering it, the angels will greet them with, “*As-Salaamu ‘alaykum* — peace be upon you.” Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَسَيَقُالُ الَّذِينَ اتَّقَوْا رَبَّهُمْ إِلَىٰ الْجَنَّةِ زُمَرًا، حَتَّىٰ إِذَا جَاءُوهَا
وَفَتِحَتْ أَبْوَابُهَا وَقَالَ لَهُمْ خَزَنَتُهَا: “سَلَامٌ عَلَيْكُمْ، طِبْتُمْ،
فَادْخُلُوهَا خَالِدِينَ.”﴾ الزمر ٧٣

«And those who feared and obeyed their Lord will be led to *Jannah* in groups. When they reach it, its gates will be open, and its keepers will say to them, “Peace be upon you! You have done well. Enter it, then, for eternal life.”»²

Specifically, *Jannah* has eight gates. A believer who excelled in a particular act of worship will be invited to enter *Jannah* through the gate pertaining to that act. Sahl Bin Sa’d (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

« في الجنة ثمانية أبواب، منها بابٌ يسمّى الرّيانُ، لا يدخله إلا الصائمون. »

«*Jannah* has eight gates, one of them called ar-Rayyaan (the Thirst Quencher) that only those who fasted (frequently) will enter.»³

1 This is recorded by Muslim, Ahmad, and others.

2 Soorat az-Zumar 39:73.

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

A believers who excelled in several acts of worship will be invited to enter through several gates, and it will be up to him to choose which gate to enter. We should, then, strive to do more prayer, charity, fasting, etc., with the hope of attaining the honor of being invited to enter through more than one gate.

ITS LEVELS

Even though all those who enter *Jannah* will be in eternal joy and happiness, they will not all be of the same level therein. They will vary in their levels according to their good deeds in this life.

Abou Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«من آمن بالله ورسوله، وأقام الصلاة، وصام رمضان، كان حقاً على الله

أن يُدْخِلَهُ الْجَنَّةَ، هاجر في سبيل الله أو جلس في أرضه التي وُلِدَ فيها.»

«Whoever believes in Allaah and His Messenger, performs the prayer, and fasts *Ramadhaan*, it will be a right upon Allaah to admit him to *Jannah* — whether he migrates for Allaah's cause or remains in his homeland.»

On hearing this, the companions asked the Prophet (ﷺ), “O Allaah's Messenger, should we not announce this to the people?” He (ﷺ) replied:

«إن في الجنة مائة درجة أعدّها الله للمجاهدين في سبيله، كلُّ

درجتين بينهما كما بين السماء والأرض. فإذا سألتُم الله فسَلُوهُ

الفردوسَ الأعلى، فإنه أوسطُ الجنةِ وأعلى الجنةِ، وفوقه عرشُ

الرحمن، ومنه تُفجَّرُ أنهارُ الجنةِ.»

«Indeed, *Jannah* has one hundred levels that

Allaah (ﷻ) prepared for those who strive for His cause, the distance between every two levels is like that between the heaven and earth. Therefore, when you ask Allaah, ask Him for *al-Firdaws al-A'laa* (the Uppermost Paradise); it is the highest and best part of *Jannah*; immediately above it is the Most Merciful's Throne, and the rivers of *Jannah* flow out of it.›¹

The difference between the levels of *Jannah* is extremely large. Aboo Sa'eed (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إن أهل الجنة ليتراءون أهل العُرفِ من فوقهم كما تتراءون الكوكبَ الدريَّ الغابرَ في الأفقِ لتفاضلِ ما بينهم.»

‹Indeed, the people in *Jannah* will observe those of the high levels above them like you observe a bright star far in the horizon — because of the great difference among them.›²

We should remember that our deeds in this life determine our level in *Jannah*. We should not be content with the lowest levels of *Jannah*. Rather, we should strive hard and ask Allaah sincerely admit us to the Uppermost Paradise, which is the best and highest part of *Jannah*.

THE FIRST PEOPLE TO ENTER IT

The first human to enter *Jannah* will be the Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ). Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أتى باب الجنة يوم القيامة فاستفتح، فيقول الخازن: "من أنت؟"»

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Ahmad.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and Ahmad.

فأقول: ”محمد.“ فيقول: ”بك أمرتُ. لا أفتحُ لأحدٍ قبلك.“»

⟨On Resurrection Day, I will come to the gate of *Jannah* and seek admission. The gatekeeper will say, “Who are you?” I will reply, “Muhammad.” He will say, “I have been commanded to open for you, and for no one before you.”⟩¹

Those who will enter *Jannah* next will be the prophets and best of the righteous. They will look most beautiful and gracious. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إنَّ أولَ زُمرةٍ يدخلونَ الجنَّةَ على صورةِ القمرِ ليلةَ البدرِ، والذين يلوْنَهُم على أشدِّ كوكبٍ دُرِّيٍّ في السماءِ إضاءةً. لا يبولون، ولا يتغوْطونَ، ولا يمتخطونَ، ولا يتفلونَ. رشْحُهُم المسكُ، وأزواجُهُم الحورُ العينُ، وأخلاقُهُم على خُلُقِ رجلٍ واحدٍ، على صورةِ أبيهم آدم، ستونَ ذراعاً في السماء.»

⟨The first group of people entering *Jannah* will be like a full-moon (in brilliance), and those following them will be like the brightest star in the sky.

They will not urinate, nor defecate, nor blow their nose from mucus, nor spit. Their sweat will be musk. Their wives will be *al-Hoor ul-'Een* (the Wide-Eyed Maidens). Their characters will be similar (in elegance). They will all resemble their forefather Aadam: sixty cubits² tall.⟩³

1 Recorded by Muslim.

2 A cubit (or arm-length) is about 50 cm (or 20 in). We have shown in the fourth book of this series, “Knowing the Prophets”, that Aadam was an enormous man. Thus will his descendants be in *Jannah*.

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

We see from this *hadeeth* that, in *Jannah*, the believers will be free of all bodily functions that are considered tedious and unpleasant. As for their character, they will be alike in goodness, none of them having evil or rude qualities.

A special merit will be given to the believers who were tried with poverty in this life and, therefore, will not have to account for wealth in the next life: they will precede the rich believers into *Jannah* by many years! ‘Abdullaah Bin ‘Amr (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إن فقراء المهاجرين يسبقون الأغنياء يوم القيامة إلى الجنة بأربعين خريفاً.»

«Indeed, on Resurrection Day, the poor among the *Muhaajiroon*¹ will precede the wealthy to *Jannah* by forty years.»²

THE LAST PEOPLE TO ENTER IT

The people in the lowest level of *Jannah* will mostly be the believers who committed many major sins and never repented from them. They will first receive punishment in Hell before entering *Jannah*, and they will be placed in its lowest levels.

After having received their allotted portion in the Fire for their sins, those believers who will lose consciousness and feel no additional pain — until Allaah (ﷻ) decrees for them to enter *Jannah*. Aboo Sa‘eed al-Khudree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أما أهل النار الذين هم أهلها، فإنهم لا يموتون فيها ولا يحيون. ولكن ناساً أصابتهم النار بذنوبهم فأماتتهم إماتة، حتى إذا كانوا فحماً أُذِنَ بالشفاعة فجيء بهم ضبائرَ ضبائرَ، فبُثُّوا على أنهار الجنة، ثم قيل: ”يا

1 The *sahaabah* who migrated from Makkah to Madinah.

2 Recorded by Muslim.

أهل الجنة، أفيضوا عليهم.“ فينبُتونَ نباتِ الحبةِ تكونُ في حميلِ السيلِ.»

«As for the people of the Fire who are truly attributed to it, they will abide in it eternally, neither dying nor living. But there are people (who should not be attributed to it) that the Fire will have struck them because of their sins, causing them to die. After they have turned to dead coals, permission will be given for intercession, and they will be brought in piles and spread around the rivers of *Jannah*. The people of *Jannah* will then be told, “Pour water over them.” Thus, they will grow like a seed grows when it is hit by rain water.»¹

There will be a special treatment for the very last of the sinful believers to enter *Jannah*. This is largely detailed in some *hadeeths*, but we present here a shorter version. Ibn Mas'ood (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إني لأعلمُ آخرَ أهلِ النارِ خُروجاً منها وآخرَ أهلِ الجنةِ دُخولاً الجنةَ: رجلٌ يخرجُ من النارِ جبواً، فيقولُ اللهُ عزَّ وجلَّ له: “اذهب فادخلِ الجنةَ.” فيأتيها فيُخَيَّلُ إليه أنها ملاءى، فيرجع فيقول: “يا ربِّ وجدتها ملاءى.” فيقول له: “اذهب فادخلِ الجنةَ.” فيأتيها فيُخَيَّلُ إليه أنها ملاءى، فيرجع فيقول: “يا ربِّ وجدتها ملاءى.” فيقول اللهُ له: “اذهب فادخلِ الجنةَ، فإن لك عشرةَ أمثالِ الدنيا.” ذلك أدنى أهلِ الجنةِ منزلةً.»

«Indeed, I know the person who will be the last to exit from Hell and the last to enter *Jannah*: a man who will exit from the Fire crawling.

Allaah (ﷻ) will tell him, "Go enter *Jannah*." When he tries to enter it, it will appear full to him. So he will turn back and say, "O my Lord, I found it full." Again, Allaah will tell him, "Go enter *Jannah*." And again, it will appear full to him and he will turn back and say, "O my Lord, I found it full." Allaah will then tell him, "Go enter *Jannah*, and you will be given ten times as much as in the whole worldly life." That man will be at the lowest level among the people of *Jannah*.> ¹

ITS TREES AND VEGETATION

Jannah is full of shady trees that are always heavy with fruits. Their stems are made of pure gold. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ما في الجنة شجرة إلا وساقها من ذهب.»

<There is no tree in *Jannah* but that it has a gold stem.> ²

Some trees in *Jannah* are of enormous proportions. Aboo Sa'eed (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إن في الجنة شجرة يسيرُ الراكبُ المضمَرُ مائة عامٍ ما يقطعُها.»

<Indeed, there is in *Jannah* a tree that a rider of a swift horse (from this life) would not be able to cross it in one hundred years.> ³

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

ITS RIVERS

Jannah has numerous rivers filled with various good drinks. They flow beneath the palaces and dwellings of the people of *Jannah* so they can reach and drink from them whenever they wish. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ يُدْخِلُ الَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا وَعَمِلُوا الصَّالِحَاتِ جَنَّاتٍ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ﴾ محمد ١٢

«Indeed, Allaah will admit those who have believed and done righteous deeds to gardens beneath which rivers flow.»¹

The most common substances flowing in the *Jannah*'s rivers are: pure water, milk, nonintoxicating wine, and honey — all most sweet and refreshing. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿مَثَلُ الْجَنَّةِ الَّتِي وُعِدَ الْمُتَّقُونَ، فِيهَا أَنْهَارٌ مِنْ مَّاءٍ غَيْرِ ءَاسِنٍ، وَأَنْهَارٌ مِنْ لَبَنٍ لَمْ يَتَغَيَّرَ طَعْمُهُ، وَأَنْهَارٌ مِنْ خَمْرٍ لَذَّةٍ لِلشَّارِبِينَ، وَأَنْهَارٌ مِنْ عَسَلٍ مُصَفًّى، وَلَهُمْ فِيهَا مِنْ كُلِّ الثَّمَرَاتِ، وَمَغْفِرَةٌ مِنْ رَبِّهِمْ. كَمَنْ هُوَ خَالِدٌ فِي النَّارِ، وَسُقُوا مَاءً حَمِيمًا فَقَطَّعَ أَمْعَاءَهُمْ؟﴾ محمد ١٥

«Here is a parable of the Garden that is promised to the righteous: It has rivers of water that time does not alter, rivers of milk whose taste never declines, rivers of wine delicious to those who drink, and rivers of purified honey; they will have in it all kinds of fruits, in addition to forgiveness from their Lord. Can this be compared to those who will abide eternally in

1 Soorat Muhammad 47:12.

the Fire and will be given to drink boiling water that will cut their intestines to pieces?»¹

These rivers gush out from seas full of the same fluids. Mu'aawiyah Bin Haydah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنَّ فِي الْجَنَّةِ بَحْرَ الْمَاءِ، وَبَحْرَ الْعَسَلِ، وَبَحْرَ اللَّبَنِ،
وَبَحْرَ الْخَمْرِ، ثُمَّ تَتَشَقَّقُ الْأَنْهَارُ بَعْدُ.»

«Indeed, there is in *Jannah* a sea of water, a sea of honey, a sea of milk, and a sea of wine. The rivers then gush out from them.»²

One of the famous rivers of *Jannah* is al-Kawthar that Allaah granted to His Messenger Muhammad (ﷺ). During his *Israa'* (night) journey, the Prophet (ﷺ) entered *Jannah*, accompanied by Jibreel (عليه السلام), and saw many of its marvels. Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«دَخَلْتُ الْجَنَّةَ فَإِذَا أَنَا بِنَهْرٍ حَافَتَاهُ خِيَامُ اللَّوْلُؤَةِ، فَضَرَبْتُ بِيَدِي إِلَى مَا يَجْرِي فِيهِ الْمَاءُ، فَإِذَا مِسْكٌ أَذْفَرُ. قُلْتُ: "مَا هَذَا يَا جَبْرَيْلُ؟"
قال: "هَذَا الْكَوْثَرُ الَّذِي أَعْطَاكَ اللَّهُ.»

«I entered *Jannah* and saw a river whose banks were lined with tents, each tent made of one (large) pearl. I touched with my hand the stream-bed and found nice smelling musk. I asked Jibreel, "What is this river, O Jibreel?" He replied, "This is al-Kawthar river that Allaah

1 Soorat Muhammad 47:15.

2 Recorded by at-Tirmithi and Ahmad. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaah* no. 5576).

granted you.»¹

Qualities of those Who Will Enter *Jannah*

In the texts of the Qur'aan and Sunnah, we find specific qualities for those who will enter *Jannah*. In this section, we present several of these qualities. We should remember, however, that one important quality must encompass all: a true belief in Allaah that is not marred by any *shirk*. A person who does not possess this quality will never qualify to enter *Jannah*.



When we study these qualities, we should develop a strong urge to acquire them and adorn ourselves with them in order to deserve the great prize to which they lead — a prize of victory and eternal happiness, away from the roaring and crushing of Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿لَا يَسْتَوِي أَصْحَابُ النَّارِ وَأَصْحَابُ الْجَنَّةِ،

أَصْحَابُ الْجَنَّةِ هُمُ الْفَائِزُونَ﴾ الحشر ٢٠

«They cannot be equal: the people of the Fire and the people of *Jannah*. The people of *Jannah* are the successful.»²

THEY WORK FOR IT

This life is short-termed and filled with disturbances that spoil its pleasures, whereas *Jannah* is eternal and filled with perfect, unblemished happiness. Allaah (ﷻ) designated this life as the only portal for entering *Jannah*. Entering *Jannah*, then, is a result of our performance in this life. Knowing this should push us to

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Ahmad, and others.

2 Soorat al-Hashr 60:20.

strive for our magnificent goal. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَتِلْكَ الْجَنَّةُ الَّتِي أُورِثْتُمُوهَا بِمَا كُنْتُمْ تَعْمَلُونَ﴾ الزخرف ٧٢

«And that is *Jannah* that you are made to inherit for what you used to do.»¹

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿لَهُمْ مَا يَشَاءُونَ عِنْدَ رَبِّهِمْ، ذَٰلِكَ جَزَاءُ الْمُحْسِنِينَ﴾ الزمر ٣٤

«They will have whatever they desire with their Lord. That is the reward of the doers of good»²

THEY BELIEVE IN ALLAAH

The people of *Jannah* are those who hold a true belief in Allaah (ﷻ): He is the Creator and Lord, He is the only God who deserves to be worshiped, and He has the most excellent names and attributes³. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَعَدَ اللَّهُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَالْمُؤْمِنَاتِ جَنَّاتٍ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا وَمَسَاكِنَ طَيِّبَةً فِي جَنَّاتِ عَدْنٍ وَرِضْوَانٍ مِّنَ اللَّهِ أَكْبَرَ ذَٰلِكَ هُوَ الْفَوْزُ الْعَظِيمُ﴾ التوبة ٧٢

«Allaah has promised the believing men and women gardens beneath which rivers flow, wherein they will abide eternally, and blessed dwellings in the Gardens of Residence; but greater than that is Allaah's approval. That is the

1 Soorat az-Zukhruf 43:72.

2 Soorat az-Zumar 39:34.

3 This belief was discussed in the first book of this series: "Knowing Allaah".

supreme victory.»¹

THEY ACT RIGHTEOUSLY

In addition to true faith, the better a believer's deeds are, the higher that his level in *Jannah* will be. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ قَالُوا رَبُّنَا اللَّهُ ثُمَّ اسْتَقَامُوا تَتَنَزَّلُ عَلَيْهِمُ الْمَلَائِكَةُ أَلَّا تَخَافُوا
وَلَا تَحْزَنُوا وَأَبْشِرُوا بِالْجَنَّةِ الَّتِي كُنتُمْ تُوعَدُونَ ﴿٣٠﴾ نَحْنُ أَوْلِيَائُكُمْ فِي
الْحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ، وَلَكُمْ فِيهَا مَا تَشْتَهِي أَنْفُسُكُمْ، وَلَكُمْ
فِيهَا مَا تَدَّعُونَ ﴿٣١﴾ نُزُلًا مِّنْ غَفُورٍ رَّحِيمٍ ﴿٣٢﴾﴾

«Surely, those who say, “Our Lord is Allaah Alone,” and act righteously, the angels descend upon them (at the time of death) saying, “Do not fear or grieve. We bring you the good news of *Jannah* that you were promised. We have been your allies in the first life and will be so in the last, and you will receive then whatever your souls desire, and you will receive whatever you request — as accommodation from the Forgiving and Merciful.”»²

THEY HAVE TAQWAA

Taqwaa (or piety) is the highest form of righteousness. It means fearing Allaah and revering Him to the extent of earnestly fulfilling His commands and avoiding His prohibitions. People with *taqwaa* will quickly be admitted to *Jannah* and welcomed by its guarding angels. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

1 Soorat at-Tawbah 9:72.

2 Soorat Fussilat 41:30-32.

﴿وَسِيقَ الَّذِينَ اتَّقَوْا رَبَّهُمْ إِلَى الْجَنَّةِ زُمَرًا، حَتَّىٰ إِذَا جَاءُوهَا وَفُتِحَتْ أَبْوَابُهَا وَقَالَ لَهُمْ خَزَنَتُهَا: "سَلَامٌ عَلَيْكُمْ، طِبْتُمْ، فَأَدْخُلُوهَا خَالِدِينَ."﴾¹
 وَقَالُوا: "الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي صَدَقْنَا وَعَدَّهُ، وَأَوْرَثَنَا الْأَرْضَ، نَتَّبِعُ مِنَ الْجَنَّةِ حَيْثُ نَشَاءُ، فَنِعْمَ أَجْرُ الْعَامِلِينَ."﴾ الزمر ٧٣-٧٤

«And those who had *taqwaa* toward their Lord will be driven to *Jannah* in groups. When they reach it, its gates will be open, and its keepers will say to them, "Peace be upon you! You have done well. Enter it, then, for eternal life." They will say, "All praise is to Allaah who has fulfilled for us His promise and made us inherit the land so we may settle in *Jannah* as we please. Excellent indeed is the reward of those who labored (in Allaah's way).»¹

THEY REPENT AND TURN BACK TO ALLAAH

The following *aayaat* emphasize four aspects of *taqwaa* that are present in those who will enter *Jannah*: they frequently turn to Allaah with repentance, they safeguard Allaah's limits, they fear Him, and their hearts are submissive to Him. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَأَزَلَّتْ الْجَنَّةُ لِلْمُتَّقِينَ غَيْرَ بَعِيدٍ﴾ "هَذَا مَا تُوْعَدُونَ لِكُلِّ أَوَّابٍ حَفِيظٍ ﴿مَنْ حَشِيَ الرَّحْمَنَ بِالْغَيْبِ وَجَاءَ بِقَلْبٍ مُنِيبٍ ﴿أَدْخُلُوهَا بِسَلَامٍ.﴾ ذَٰلِكَ يَوْمُ الْخُلُودِ ﴿لَهُمْ مَا يَشَاءُونَ فِيهَا، وَكَدَيْنَا مَزِيدٌ﴾ ﴿ق ٣١-٣٥

«And *Jannah* will be brought within sight of those with *taqwaa*, so it will not be far from

them. (They will be told,) “This is what you were promised — for every person who kept turning (to Allaah) and safeguarding (His commands), and who feared the Most Merciful although He is beyond his (i.e., the person’s) perception, and who has come with a heart full of submission and repentance. Enter it in peace.” This is the Day of Eternity. They will have whatever they desire therein, and there is yet more with Us.»¹

THEY FOLLOW THE PROPHET AND HIS COMPANIONS

Those who truly obey Allaah (ﷻ) and His Messenger (ﷺ) will deserve the company of the best people in *Jannah*. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَمَنْ يُطِعِ اللَّهَ وَالرَّسُولَ فَأُولَٰئِكَ مَعَ الَّذِينَ أَنْعَمَ اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِمْ مِنَ النَّبِيِّينَ وَالصِّدِّيقِينَ وَالشُّهَدَاءِ وَالصَّالِحِينَ، وَحَسُنَ أُولَٰئِكَ رَفِيقًا ﴿٦٩﴾ النساء

«Whoever obeys Allaah and the Messenger — they will be with those whom Allaah has favored of the prophets, the most truthful, the martyrs and the righteous. Excellent indeed are those as companions.»²

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«كُلُّ أُمَّتِي يَدْخُلُونَ الْجَنَّةَ إِلَّا مَنْ أَبَى.»

«All of my followers will enter *Jannah* — except those who will refuse (to enter).»

The companions then exclaimed, “Who would ever refuse to enter, O Allaah’s Messenger?” He replied:

1 *Qaaf* 50:31-35.

2 *Soorat an-Nisaa’* 4:69.

«من أطاعني دخل الجنة ومن عصاني فقد أبى.»

«He who obeys me will enter *Jannah*, and he who disobeys me has, in fact, refused (to enter).»¹

Obeying Allaah and His Messenger (ﷺ) can only be true when we follow the way of the *sahaabah* (رضي الله عنهم). Allaah (ﷻ) will then be pleased with us and will admit us also to *Jannah*. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَالسَّابِقُونَ الْأَوَّلُونَ مِنَ الْمُهَاجِرِينَ وَالْأَنْصَارِ وَالَّذِينَ اتَّبَعُوهُمْ بِإِحْسَانٍ
رَضِيَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ وَرَضُوا عَنْهُ، وَأَعَدَّ لَهُمْ جَنَّاتٍ تَجْرِي تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ،
خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا أَبَدًا، ذَلِكَ الْفَوْزُ الْعَظِيمُ» التوبة ١٠٠

«As for the first forerunners among the *Muhaajiroon* and the *Ansaar*² and those who appropriately followed them — Allaah is pleased with them and they are pleased with Him, and He has prepared for them gardens beneath which rivers flow, wherein they will abide forever. That is the great attainment.»³

THEY POSSESS GOOD MANNERS

Believers who are adorned with good manners will be in the highest levels of *Jannah*. Aboo Umaamah (رضي الله عنه) reported that Allaah's Messenger (ﷺ) said:

«أنا زعيم بيت في ربض الجنة لمن ترك المراء وإن كان محققاً،

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

2 The original residents of al-Madeenah who helped and supported the Prophet (ﷺ).

3 Soorat at-Tawbah 9:100.

وببيت في وسط الجنة لمن ترك الكذب وإن كان مازحاً، وبيت
في أعلى الجنة لمن حسن خلقه.»

«I guarantee a house on the outskirts of *Jannah* for him who avoids arguing, even if he is right; and a house in the center (and best part) of *Jannah* for him who avoids lying, even if he is joking; and a house in the highest place of *Jannah* for him who has good manners.»¹

THEY DO NOT HAVE ENVY AND THEY RELY ON ALLAAH

Among the believers who will enter *Jannah* are people whose hearts are pure and gentle, like birds' hearts, devoid of envy, and truly fearing Allaah and relying on Him. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يدخل الجنة أقوامٌ أفندتهم مثل أفئدة الطير.»

«Groups of people will enter *Jannah*, with their hearts like birds' hearts (in purity and reliance on Allaah).»²

THEY FIGHT AGAINST WICKED DESIRES

Jannah will be the dwelling of those who suppress their desires. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَأَمَّا مَنْ خَافَ مَقَامَ رَبِّهِ وَنَهَى النَّفْسَ عَنِ الْهَوَىٰ ۗ
فَإِنَّ الْجَنَّةَ هِيَ الْمَأْوَىٰ﴾ ﴿النَّازِعَاتِ ٤٠-٤١﴾

1 Recorded by Aboo Daawood and ad-Diyaa' ul-Maqdisee. Verified to be *hasan* by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ul-Jaami'* no. 1464 & *as-Saheehah* no. 273).

2 Recorded by Muslim.

«But as for those who fear the position of their Lord and restrain themselves from wicked desires, indeed, *Jannah* will then be their final abode.»¹

THEY STRIVE AND SACRIFICE WITH PATIENCE

Striving and demonstrating patience for Allaah's cause are important qualities for those who enter *Jannah*. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿أَمْ حَسِبْتُمْ أَنْ تُدْخَلُوا الْجَنَّةَ وَلَمَّا يَعْلَمِ اللَّهُ الَّذِينَ جَاهَدُوا مِنْكُمْ وَيَعْلَمَ الصَّابِرِينَ﴾ آل عمران ١٤٢

«Or do you think that you will enter *Jannah* while Allaah has not yet made evident those of you who strive in His cause and made evident those who are steadfast?»²

Allaah (ﷻ) also says:

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ اشْتَرَى مِنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَنْفُسَهُمْ وَأَمْوَالَهُمْ بِأَنْ لَهُمُ الْجَنَّةُ؛ يُقَاتِلُونَ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ فَيَقْتُلُونَ وَيُقْتَلُونَ، وَعَدًّا عَلَيْهِ حَقًّا فِي التَّوْرَةِ وَالْإِنْجِيلِ وَالْقُرْآنِ، وَمَنْ أَوْفَى بِعَهْدِهِ مِنَ اللَّهِ؟ فَاسْتَبْشِرُوا بَبَيْعِكُمْ الَّذِي بَايَعْتُمْ بِهِ، وَذَلِكَ هُوَ الْفَوْزُ الْعَظِيمُ﴾ التوبة ١١١

«Indeed, Allaah has purchased of the believers their persons and their properties; for theirs (in return) is the Garden (of Paradise). They fight in Allaah's cause so they kill and are killed: a promise binding on Him in truth through the Torah, the Gospel, and the Qur'an. And who is

1 Soorat an-Naazi'aat 79:40-41.

2 Soorat Aal 'Imraan 3:142.

more faithful to his covenant than Allaah? So rejoice in the bargain that you have contracted. And that is the supreme achievement.»¹

THEY FEED, FAST, AND PRAY AT NIGHT

There are four important qualities for those who will peacefully enter *Jannah* and live in glass-like palaces: they are generous in feeding food to the guests and the needy, they are kind in speech, they fast frequently, and they pray at night while other people are asleep. Aboo Maalik al-Ash'aree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إن في الجنة غرفاً يرى ظاهرها من باطنها، وباطنُها من ظاهرها، أعدّها الله لمن أطعمَ الطعامَ، وألانَ الكلامَ، وتابَعَ الصَّيَّامَ، وصَلَّى بالليلِ والنَّاسُ نيامٌ.»

«Indeed, there are elevated chambers in *Jannah* whose inside can be seen from the outside, and whose outside can be seen from the inside. Allaah prepared them for those who feed the food (to the needy), speak gently, fast consecutively, and prays at night while the people are sleeping.»²

THEY ARE MOSTLY WEAK AND POOR

The believers who will enter *Jannah* are mostly poor and weak. Such people are usually obedient to Allaah and humble toward other believers. As for the rich and powerful people, they usually become arrogant and cruel toward other people, which often leads them to disbelief and, eventually, to Hell.

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

1 Soorat at-Tawbah 9:111.

2 Recorded by Ahmad, Ibn Hibbaan, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaah* 1189).

«تَحَاجَّتِ الْجَنَّةُ وَالنَّارَ، فَقَالَتِ النَّارُ: "أَوْتَرْتُ بِالْمُتَكَبِّرِينَ وَالْمُتَجَبِّرِينَ." وَقَالَتِ الْجَنَّةُ: "مَالِي لَا يَدْخُلْنِي إِلَّا ضِعْفَاءُ النَّاسِ وَسَقَطُهُمْ؟" قَالَ اللَّهُ تَبَارَكَ وَتَعَالَى لِلْجَنَّةِ: "أَنْتِ رَحْمَتِي، أَرْحَمُ بِكَ مِنْ أَشَاءِ مَنْ عِبَادِي." وَقَالَ لِلنَّارِ: "إِنَّمَا أَنْتِ عَذَابٌ أُعَذِّبُ بِكَ مِنْ أَشَاءِ مَنْ عِبَادِي." "وَلِكُلِّ وَاحِدَةٍ مِنْكُمْ مَلُؤُهَا." فَأَمَّا النَّارُ فَلَا تَمْتَلِئُ حَتَّى يَضَعَ رِجْلَهُ، فَتَقُولُ: "قَطَّ، قَطَّ." فَهِنَالِكَ تَمْتَلِئُ وَيُزَوَّى بِعِضْهَا إِلَى بَعْضٍ، وَلَا يَظْلِمُ اللَّهُ عَزَّ وَجَلَّ مِنْ خَلْقِهِ أَحَدًا. وَأَمَّا الْجَنَّةُ، فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ يُنْشِئُ لَهَا خَلْقًا.»

«*Jannah* and Hell inquired to Allaah. Hell asked, "Why will the arrogant and the tyrant only come to me?" And *Jannah* asked, "Why only the weak and humble people will enter me?" Allaah (ﷻ) said to *Jannah*, "You (*Jannah*) are My mercy that I direct to whomever I will of My servants, and you (Hell) are My torment that I direct to whomever I will of My servants. And each one of you will be filled."

As for hell, it will not be filled until He (ﷻ) will put His foot (over it), so it will say, "Enough, enough!" And it will then shrink and become full. Indeed, your Lord does not direct injustice toward any of His creation.

And as for *Jannah*, Allaah will create additional creation to fill it.»

Arrogance is a destructive quality for people. No human should ever be arrogant because no human is perfect. Whatever favors we enjoy are not created by us, but only by the Lord of the worlds. Only Allaah (ﷻ) possesses the qualities of perfection and may rightfully boast about them. Let us, then, work hard to be of the believers who will fill *Jannah* instead of Hell — of those

who are submissive to Allaah and humble with His creation.
Aameen.

Pleasures of the People of *Jannah*

The people of *Jannah* will be in bliss and happiness beyond imagination. Everything they have or do will be most gracious and enjoyable. In what follows, we can only highlight a few of the great pleasures that Allaah will grant them.

THEIR YOUTHFULNESS

The people of *Jannah* will live eternally without growing old. They will remain at the youthful age of thirty-some years. Mu'aath Bin Jabal (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«يدخلُ أهلُ الجنةِ الجنةَ جُرْدًا مُردًا، كأَنتَهُم مُكحَلُونَ، أَبْنَاءُ
ثلاثينَ أو ثلاثٍ وثلاثينَ سنة.»

«The people of *Jannah* will enter it having no facial or body hair. Their eyes will appear to be lined with *kuhl* (antimony). They will all be thirty or thirty-three years old.»¹

Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«من يدخلُ الجنةَ ينعَمُ ولا يبأسُ، ولا تبلى ثيابه، ولا يفنى شبابه.»

«He who enters *Jannah* will be happy without misery, his clothes will never wear out, and his youth will never end.»²

1 Recorded by at-Tirmithee and Ahmad. Verified to be *hasan* (good) by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaah* no. 5565).

2 Recorded by Muslim.

THEIR FACES

The happiness that the people of *Jannah* enjoy will show on their lovely faces. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿تَعْرِفُ فِي وُجُوهِهِمْ نَضْرَةَ النَّعِيمِ﴾ المطففين ٢٤

«You will see on their faces the radiance of happiness.»¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿وُجُوهُ يَوْمَئِذٍ نَّاعِمَةٌ لِّسَعِيهَا رَاضِيَةٌ ۖ فِي جَنَّةٍ عَالِيَةٍ ۖ لَا تَسْمَعُ فِيهَا لُغِيَّةً ۖ فِيهَا عَيْنٌ جَارِيَةٌ ۖ فِيهَا سُرُرٌ مَّرْفُوعَةٌ ۖ وَأَكْوَابٌ مَّوْضُوعَةٌ ۖ وَنَمَارِقُ مَصْفُوفَةٌ ۖ وَزَرَابِيُّ مَبْتُوثَةٌ﴾ الغاشية ٨-١٦

«Faces (of the believers) will on that Day shine with happiness, well-pleased with the fruit of their effort. They will be in sublime gardens where you will hear no empty talk. Therein will be flowing springs, elevated seats, cups placed ready (to drink), lined up cushions, and spread out carpets.»²

Allaah (ﷻ) also says:

﴿لِّلَّذِينَ أَحْسَنُوا الْحُسْنَىٰ وَزِيَادَةٌ، وَلَا يَرْهَقُ وُجُوهُهُمُ قَتَرٌ وَلَا ذِلَّةٌ،
أُولَٰئِكَ أَصْحَابُ الْجَنَّةِ هُمْ فِيهَا خَالِدُونَ﴾ يونس ٢٦

«For those who have done good is the ultimate good in store — and even more³. No darkness or

1 Soorat al-Mutaffifeen 83:24.

2 Soorat al-Ghaashiyah 88:8-16.

3 This additional reward will be looking at Allaah's face, which we discuss

disgrace will overshadow their faces. It is they who are the people of *Jannah*, therein to abide eternally.»¹

THEIR GARDENS

Allaah will admit the people of *Jannah* into splendid gardens as wide as the heavens and earth. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



Its blissful shades, loaded with fruits, will come down low over them.

﴿وَسَارِعُوا إِلَىٰ مَغْفِرَةٍ مِّن رَّبِّكُمْ وَجَنَّةٍ عَرْضُهَا السَّمَاوَاتُ

وَالْأَرْضُ أُعِدَّتْ لِلْمُتَّقِينَ﴾ ﴿١٣٣﴾ آل عمران

«Hasten to forgiveness from your Lord and a Garden as wide as the heavens and earth, prepared for the pious.»²

In their gardens, the believers will have as much gold and silver as they wish. Aboo Moosaa al-Ash'aree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«جَنَّتَانِ مِنْ فِضَّةٍ، أُنَيْتُهُمَا وَمَا فِيهِمَا، وَجَنَّتَانِ مِنْ ذَهَبٍ

أُنَيْتُهُمَا وَمَا فِيهِمَا، وَمَا بَيْنَ الْقَوْمِ وَبَيْنَ أَنْ يَنْظُرُوا إِلَىٰ رَبِّهِمْ

إِلَّا رِذَاءَ الْكَبِيرَاءِ عَلَىٰ وَجْهِهِ فِي جَنَّةِ عَدْنٍ.»

«(Some believers will have) two gardens of silver — their utensils and everything in them, and (others³ will have) two gardens of gold —

below.

1 Soorat Yoonus 10:26.

2 Soorat Aal 'Imraan 3:133.

3 These people will be of higher status in *Jannah* than the ones with two gardens of silver utensils. The two pairs of gardens are described in some detail in Soorat ar-Rahmaan 55:46-77.

their utensils and everything in them. (In the beginning ¹,) nothing will prevent the people (of *Jannah*) from looking at their Lord except the garment of Dignity veiling His face above the Garden of Residence ('*Adn*).» ²

THEIR SPOUSES AND FAMILIES

Unlike the disbelievers whose family ties will be ended on Resurrection Day, the believers in *Jannah* will enjoy a pleasurable family life. They will be reunited with their righteous relatives. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿جَنَّاتُ عَدْنٍ يَدْخُلُونَهَا وَمَنْ صَلَحَ مِنْ آبَائِهِمْ وَأَزْوَاجِهِمْ وَذُرِّيَّاتِهِمْ﴾ الرعد ٢٣

«(The believers' reward will be) Gardens of Residence that they will enter with whoever was righteous among their fathers, their spouses, and their descendants.» ³

The people of *Jannah* will enjoy a peaceful life in the company of their spouses. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ أَصْحَابَ الْجَنَّةِ الْيَوْمَ فِي شُغْلٍ فَكِهُونَ ﴿٥٥﴾ هُمْ وَأَزْوَاجُهُمْ

فِي ظِلِّلٍ عَلَى الْأَرَائِكِ مُتَكِنُونَ ﴿٥٦﴾﴾ يس ٥٥-٥٦

«Indeed, the people of *Jannah*, that Day, will be entertained in joyful occupation, together with their spouses, reclining on adorned couches in the shades (of fruit-trees).» ⁴

1 As we show below, Allaah will later remove the veil of Dignity, so that the people of *Jannah* will be able to see Him (ﷻ).

2 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

3 Soorat ar-Ra'd 13:23.

4 Soorat Yaa-seen 36:55-56.

The women of *Jannah* will be most beautiful and majestic. Even a scarf of theirs is worth more than all that is on earth! Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«لرَّوْحَةُ فِي سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ أَوْ غَدْوَةٌ خَيْرٌ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا وَمَا فِيهَا، وَلَمَْوْضِعُ قَوْسٍ أَحَدِكُمْ مِنَ الْجَنَّةِ خَيْرٌ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا وَمَا فِيهَا، وَلَوْ أَنَّ أَمْرَأَةً مِنْ أَهْلِ الْجَنَّةِ أَطَّلَعَتْ إِلَى أَهْلِ الْأَرْضِ لِأَضَاءَتِ مَا بَيْنَهُمَا وَلَمَلَأَتْهُ رِيحًا، وَلَنْصِيْفُهَا عَلَى رَأْسِهَا خَيْرٌ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا وَمَا فِيهَا.»

«Going on an evening or a morning trip for Allaah's cause is worth more than the world and all its contents. And surely, the (small) area that can hold your bow and arrows in *Jannah* is worth more than the world and all its contents. And if a woman from the people of *Jannah* was to look upon the people on earth, she would illuminate the distance between the east and west and would fill it with the smell of perfume. And surely, her head scarf is worth more than the world and all its contents.»¹

There are two types of women in *Jannah*:

1. The righteous believing women from this life. Allaah will recreate them in the most beautiful appearance². If their husbands were also righteous, they will be reunited with them in *Jannah*. Otherwise, Allaah (ﷻ) will marry them to the most suitable husbands for them from among the men of *Jannah*. These woman will be the mistresses of their husbands' household, and other women in the household will be below them in status and beauty.

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

2 As in *Soorat al-Waaqi'ah* 56:35-37.

2. *Al-Hoor ul-'Een* (the Wide-Eyed Maidens). These are extremely beautiful wives that Allaah will create for the men of *Jannah*.

THEIR FOOD

The people of *Jannah* will eat the choicest foods. They will recline peacefully and joyfully under shades of magnificent trees whose branches hang low and heavy with fruits waiting to be picked. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الْمُتَّقِينَ فِي ظِلِّلٍ وَعُيُونٍ ﴿٤١﴾ وَفَوْقَهُمْ مِمَّا يَشْتَهُونَ ﴿٤٢﴾
 "كُلُوا وَأَشْرَبُوا هَنِيئًا بِمَا كُنْتُمْ تَعْمَلُونَ ﴿٤٣﴾ إِنَّا كَذَلِكَ نَجْزِي
 الْمُحْسِنِينَ. ﴿٤٤﴾﴾ المرسلات ٤١-٤٤

«Indeed, the righteous will be among shades and springs, and fruits from whatever they desire. (They will be told,) “Eat and drink in satisfaction for what you used to do. Indeed, We thus reward the doers of good.”»¹

They will have all that their souls desire and that delights the eyes. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿أَدْخُلُوا الْجَنَّةَ أَنْتُمْ وَأَزْوَاجُكُمْ تُحْبَرُونَ. ﴿٧٠﴾ يُطَافُ عَلَيْهِمْ بِصِحَافٍ
 مِّنْ ذَهَبٍ وَأَكْوَابٍ، وَفِيهَا مَا تَشْتَهِيهِ الْأَنْفُسُ وَتَلَذُّ الْأَعْيُنُ، ﴿٧١﴾ وَأَنْتُمْ
 فِيهَا خَالِدُونَ، ﴿٧٢﴾ وَتِلْكَ الْجَنَّةُ الَّتِي أُورِثْتُمُوهَا بِمَا كُنْتُمْ تَعْمَلُونَ ﴿٧٣﴾
 لَكُمْ فِيهَا فَاكِهَةٌ كَثِيرَةٌ مِنْهَا تَأْكُلُونَ. ﴿٧٤﴾﴾ الزخرف ٧٠-٧٣

«(They will be told,) “Enter *Jannah*, you and your

1 Soorat al-Mursalaat 71:41-44.

spouses, rejoicing.” Circulated among them will be plates and cups of gold. And therein will be all that the souls desire and all that delights the eyes. (They will also be told,) “And you will abide therein eternally. And that is *Jannah* that you are made to inherit for what you used to do. You have therein much fruit from which you will eat.”»¹

They will also eat the finest of meats.
Allaah (ﷻ) says:



﴿وَأَمَدَدْنَاهُمْ بِفَاكِهَةٍ وَلَحْمٍ مِّمَّا يَشْتَهُونَ﴾ الطور ٢٢

«And We will provide them with fruit and meat from whatever they desire.»²

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَفَاكِهَةٍ مِّمَّا يَتَخَيَّرُونَ﴾ وَلَحْمِ طَيْرٍ مِّمَّا يَشْتَهُونَ ﴿ الواقعة ٢٠-٢١﴾

«And (they will have) fruit of what they select, and bird meat of whatever they desire.»³

The food of *Jannah* neither ends nor recedes. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿مِثْلُ آبِ الْجَنَّةِ الَّتِي تَجْرُؤُا فِيهَا سُرُورًا فَلَا يَصْفَى وَلَا يُظْلَمُ﴾

﴿الرعد ٣٥﴾ وَعُقْبَى الَّذِينَ اتَّقَوْا. وَعُقْبَى الْكٰفِرِينَ النَّارُ ﴿

«The description of *Jannah* that the righteous have been promised is that: beneath it rivers flow, and its fruit is lasting, and so is its shade.

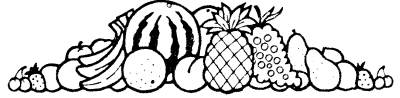
1 Soorat az-Zukhruf 43:70-73.

2 Soorat at-Toor 52:22.

3 Soorat al-Waaqi'ah 56:20-21.

That is the consequence for the righteous, whereas the consequence for the disbelievers is the Fire.»¹

In this life, when we like a fruit and later eat another similar one, we find that the taste is not always



They will have all the fruits that they desire.

the same. We may eat a sweet plum, and the next turns out sour. As for the people of *Jannah*, they will eat fruits that have magnificent taste. When they desire to eat more fruits of the same kind, they will taste as good as before. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَبَشِّرِ الَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا وَعَمِلُوا الصَّالِحَاتِ أَنَّ لَهُمْ جَنَّاتٍ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ كُلَّمَا رُزِقُوا مِنْهَا مِنْ ثَمَرَةٍ رَزِقُوا قَالُوا: "هَذَا الَّذِي رُزِقْنَا مِنْ قَبْلُ". وَأْتُوا بِهِ مُتَشَابِهًا وَلَهُمْ فِيهَا أَزْوَاجٌ مُطَهَّرَةٌ وَهُمْ فِيهَا خَالِدُونَ﴾ البقرة ٢٥

«Give glad tidings to those who believe and do good that they will have gardens beneath which rivers flow. Every time they are fed with fruits therefrom they will say, "This is what we were previously fed." For it is given to them in likeness. And they will have therein purified spouses, and they will abide therein eternally.»²

In this life, even if we eat the most delicious and expensive food, it will eventually leave our body in an unpleasant form and smell. As for the people of *Jannah*, they will enjoy their food and drink, and it will leave their body in the form of musk-smelling sweat! Jaabir (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

﴿يَأْكُلُ أَهْلُ الْجَنَّةِ فِيهَا وَيَشْرَبُونَ، وَلَا يَتَغَوَّطُونَ، وَلَا يَمْتَخِطُونَ،﴾

1 Soorat ar-Ra'd 13:35.

2 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:25.

ولا يبولون، ولكن طعامهم ذاك جُشاء ورشح كرشح المسك،
يُلهمون التسبيح كما تُلهمون النفس.»

«The people of *Jannah* will eat and drink, but will not defecate or blow their nose or urinate. The food they eat will turn into musk-smelling burping and sweat. They will be inspired to say *tasbeeh* (glorification of Allaah) like you are inspired to breathe.»¹

In *Jannah*, there will be no required acts of worship like we have in this life. Yet, Allaah (ﷻ) deserves to be worshiped and glorified all the time, and the people of *Jannah* will do this naturally, just like breathing.

THEIR DRINKS

The people of *Jannah* will drink the most delicious drinks. Their drinks will come from the pure sources and rivers of *Jannah*.

Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الْأَبْرَارَ يَشْرَبُونَ مِنْ كَأْسٍ كَانَ مِزَاجُهَا كَافُورًا ۗ عَيْنَا
يَشْرَبُ بِهَا عِبَادُ اللَّهِ يُفَجِّرْنَهَا تَفْجِيرًا ۗ﴾ الإنسان 5-6

«Indeed, the righteous will drink from a glass (of wine) flavored with *kaafoor* — a spring of which Allaah's (righteous) servants will drink, making it gush forth in force and abundance.»²

Allaah (ﷻ) also says:

﴿فَوَقَّاهُمُ اللَّهُ شَرَّ ذَلِكَ الْيَوْمِ، وَلَقَّاهُمْ نَضْرَةً وَسُرُورًا ۗ وَجَزَّاهُمْ بِمَا

1 Recorded by Muslim, Ahmad, and Aboo Daawood.

2 Soorat al-Insaaan 76:5-6.

صَبَرُوا جَنَّةً وَحَرِيرًا ﴿ مُتَّكِنِينَ فِيهَا عَلَى الْأَرَائِكِ، لَا يَرَوْنَ فِيهَا
شَمْسًا وَلَا زَمْهَرِيرًا ﴿ وَدَانِيَةً عَلَيْهِمْ ظِلَالُهَا، وَذُلَّتْ أَطْرُفُهَا
تَذَلِيلًا ﴿ وَيُطَافُ عَلَيْهِمْ بِبَانِيَةٍ مِّنْ فِضَّةٍ وَأَكْوَابٍ كَانَتْ قَوَارِيرًا ﴿
قَوَارِيرًا مِّنْ فِضَّةٍ قَدَّرُوهَا تَقْدِيرًا ﴿ وَيُسْقَوْنَ فِيهَا كَأْسًا كَانَ مِزَاجُهَا
زَنْجَبِيلًا ﴿ عَيْنًا فِيهَا تُسَمَّى سَلْسَبِيلًا ﴿﴾ الإنسان ١١-١٨

«So Allaah will protect them (i.e., the righteous) from the woes of that Day and will grant them radiance and happiness, and will reward them for what they patiently endured with gardens and silk. They will recline therein on adorned couches, and will see neither (burning) sun nor severe cold. The blissful shades (of *Jannah*) will come down low over them, and the clusters of fruit will hang down low within their reach. Circulated among them will be vessels of silver and cups made of crystal — crystal, but of silver, whose measure they (i.e., the people of *Jannah*) will decide. And they will be given therein to drink glasses (of wine) flavored with ginger, (derived from) a source therein called Salsabeel.»¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الْأَبْرَارَ لَفِي نَعِيمٍ ﴿ عَلَى الْأَرَائِكِ يَنْظُرُونَ ﴿ تَعْرِفُ فِي
وُجُوهِهِمْ نَضْرَةَ النَّعِيمِ ﴿ يُسْقَوْنَ مِنْ رَّحِيقٍ مَّحْتُمٍ ﴿ خِتْمُهُ،
مِسْكٌ، وَفِي ذَلِكَ فَلْيَتَنَافَسِ الْمُتَنَافِسُونَ ﴿ وَمِزَاجُهُ، مِنْ
تَسْنِيمٍ ﴿ عَيْنًا يَشْرَبُ بِهَا الْمُقَرَّبُونَ ﴿﴾ المطففين ٢٢-٢٨

1 Soorat al-Insaaan 76:11-18.

«Indeed, the righteous will surely be in happiness, (seated) on adorned couches, looking (at Allaah). You will see on their faces the radiance of happiness. They will be given a drink of pure wine that will be sealed, pouring forth with a fragrance of musk — To that (drink), then, let the competitors aspire — And it is flavored with Tasneem, a spring from which those near (to Allaah) will drink.»¹

The wine of this life causes intoxication, making a person speak and act in a bad way. It also cause hangover (subsequent headache and nausea). The delicious wine of *Jannah*, however, does not have these ugly effects. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



They will be served food and drink in gold and silver utensils.

﴿يَتَنَزَّعُونَ فِيهَا كَأْسًا لَا لَغْوٌ فِيهَا وَلَا تَأْتِيمٌ﴾ الطور ٢٣

«They will exchange with one another glasses (of wine) that cause no ill speech or sinning.»²

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَطُوفُ عَلَيْهِمْ وِلْدَانٌ مُّخَلَّدُونَ ﴿١٧﴾ بِأَكْوَابٍ وَأَبَارِيقَ وَكَأْسٍ مِّن مَّعِينٍ ﴿١٨﴾ لَا يُصَدَّعُونَ عَنْهَا وَلَا يُنزِفُونَ ﴿١٩﴾﴾ الواقعة ١٧-١٩

«Immortal youths will wait upon them with cups, pitchers, and glasses (of wine) filled from ever-flowing springs. It will neither cause them headache nor intoxication.»³

1 Soorat al-Mutaffifeen 83:22-28.

2 Soorat at-Toor 52:23.

3 Soorat al-Waaqi'ah 56:17-19.

THEIR CLOTHING AND JEWELRY

The people of *Jannah* will wear garments of silk and heavy brocade trimmed with pure gold. They will adorn themselves with bracelets of gold, and pearls. Everything in *Jannah* will give the impression of great luxury. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَإِذَا رَأَيْتَ ثَمَّ رَأَيْتَ نَعِيمًا وَمَلَكًا كَبِيرًا ﴿٢٠﴾ عَلَيْهِمْ ثِيَابٌ سُنْدُسٍ خُضْرٌ وَإِسْتَبْرَقٌ، وَحُلُّوا أَسَاوِرَ مِنْ فِضَّةٍ، وَسَقَاهُمْ رَبُّهُمْ شَرَابًا طَهُورًا ﴿٢١﴾ إِنَّ هَذَا كَانَ لَكُمْ جَزَاءً، وَكَانَ سَعْيُكُمْ مَشْكُورًا.﴾ ﴿الإنسان ٢٠-٢٢﴾

«And when you look there, you will see [only] joy and supreme dominion. Upon them (i.e. the inhabitants) will be garments of green silk and brocade, and they will be adorned with bracelets of silver. And their Lord will give them to drink of a most pure drink. (And they will be told,) “Indeed, all of this is your reward, and your effort has been appreciated.”»¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ اللَّهَ يُدْخِلُ الَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا وَعَمِلُوا الصَّالِحَاتِ جَنَّاتٍ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ، يُحَلَّوْنَ فِيهَا مِنْ أَسَاوِرَ مِنْ ذَهَبٍ وَلُؤْلُؤًا، وَلِبَاسُهُمْ فِيهَا حَرِيرٌ ﴿٢٣﴾﴾ ﴿الحج ٢٣﴾

« Indeed, Allaah will admit those who believe and do righteous deeds into gardens through which rivers flow. They will be adorned therein with bracelets of gold and pearls, and their

1 Soorat al-Insaan 76:20-22.

garments therein will be silk.»¹

The clothes of the people of *Jannah* never wear out. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«من يدخل الجنة ينعّم ولا يبأس، ولا تبلى ثيابه، ولا يفنى شبابه.»

«He who enters *Jannah* will be happy without misery, his clothes will never wear out, and his youth will never end.»²

THEIR DWELLINGS

The dwellings of *Jannah* are spacious and magnificent, with rivers flowing at their doors. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«لَكِنَّ الَّذِينَ اتَّقَوْا رَبَّهُمْ لَهُمْ غُرَفٌ مِّنْ فَوْقِهَا غُرَفٌ مَّبْنِيَةٌ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ وَعَدَّ اللَّهُ لَا يُخْلِفُ اللَّهُ الْمِيعَادَ ﴿٢٠﴾ الزمر ٢٠»

«As for those who have *taqwa* of their Lord, they will have mansions upon mansions, raised high, beneath which rivers flow. This is Allaah's promise, and never does Allaah fail His promise.»³

Those dwellings will be of enormous proportions and amazing magnificence. Just imagine a sixty-mile tent made out of a hollowed pearl! Aboo Moosaa al-Ash'aree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إن للمؤمن في الجنة لخيمة من لؤلؤة واحدة مجوفة طولها ستون

1 Soorat al-Hajj 22:23.

2 Recorded by Muslim.

3 Soorat az-Zumar 39:20.

مَيْلًا، لِلْمُؤْمِنِ فِيهَا أَهْلُونَ يَطُوفُ عَلَيْهِمْ فَلَا يَرَى بَعْضُهُمْ بَعْضًا.»

«Indeed, a believer will have in *Jannah* a tent made of one hollow pearl that is sixty miles high. A believer will have wives inside it that he will visit, and they will be out of sight of one another (because of the distance).» ¹

THEIR SEATS

We saw earlier that the people of *Jannah* will recline on embroidered couches while they enjoy various types of food and drink and, above all, while they look at their Lord (ﷻ). They will enjoy all of this together with their spouses and families. Furthermore, they will often sit facing their friends, and there will be no hard feelings whatsoever between them. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الْمُتَّقِينَ فِي جَنَّاتٍ وَعُيُونٍ ﴿٤٥﴾ أَدْخُلُوهَا بِسَلَامٍ ءَأَمِينِينَ. ﴿٤٨﴾
 وَنَزَعْنَا مَا فِي صُدُورِهِمْ مِّنْ غِلٍّ، إِخْوَانًا عَلَىٰ سُرُرٍ مُّتَقَابِلِينَ ﴿٤٥﴾
 لَا يَمَسُّهُمْ فِيهَا نَصَبٌ وَمَا هُمْ مِنْهَا بِمُخْرَجِينَ ﴿٤٨﴾﴾ الْحَجَر ٤٥-٤٨

«Indeed, those with *taqwaa* will be in gardens and springs, (having been told,) “Enter it (*Jannah*) in peace and live securely.” And We will remove whatever is in their breasts of resentment, so they will be brothers, sitting on thrones facing each other. No fatigue will touch them therein, nor will they be ever removed from it.» ²

THEIR SERVANTS

We saw earlier that the servants of the people of *Jannah* will be

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim.

2 *Soorat al-Hijr* 15:45-48.

immortal youths, which means that they will always be of the same age, and always ready to serve them. They will wait upon them with cups and pitchers made of pure gold and silver.

Furthermore, those servants will always be of pleasant appearance before their masters, as though they are scattered pearls. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«وَيَطُوفُ عَلَيْهِمْ وِلْدَانٌ مُّخَلَّدُونَ، إِذَا رَأَيْتَهُمْ
حَسِبْتَهُمْ لُؤْلُؤًا مَّنشُورًا ﴿١٩﴾ الْإِنسَانِ ١٩

«Immortal youths will wait upon them: when you see them, you would think them scattered pearls.» ¹

THEIR MARKETS

The people of *Jannah* will go every week to a marketplace, not to buy and sell so much as to meet friends and attain more beauty. Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنَّ فِي الْجَنَّةِ لَسُوقاً يَأْتُونَهَا كُلَّ جُمُعَةٍ، فَتُهْبُ رِيحُ الشَّمَالِ، فَتَحْشُو فِي وُجُوهِهِمْ وَثِيَابَهُمْ، فَيَزْدَادُونَ حُسْنًا وَجَمَالًا، فَيَرْجِعُونَ إِلَى أَهْلِيهِمْ وَقَدْ أَزْدَادُوا حُسْنًا وَجَمَالًا، فَيَقُولُ لَهُمْ أَهْلُهُمْ: "وَاللَّهِ لَقَدْ أَزْدَدْتُمْ بَعْدَنَا حُسْنًا وَجَمَالًا." فَيَقُولُونَ: "وَأَنْتُمْ وَاللَّهِ لَقَدْ أَزْدَدْتُمْ بَعْدَنَا حُسْنًا وَجَمَالًا."»

«Indeed, there is in *Jannah* a marketplace to which they (the people of *Jannah*) will go every Friday ². The Northern Wind will blow, throwing (musk and perfume) into their faces and garments, and causing them to increase in

1 Soorat al-Insaan 76:19.

2 Some reports add here that «It has hills of musk.»

splendor and beauty. When they go back home, their families will tell them, "By Allaah, you are more splendid and beautiful since you left us." They will tell their families, "By Allaah, you too are more splendid and beautiful since we left you." > ¹

THEIR GREATEST PRIZE

Just to enter *Jannah* is the best prize of all. But once admitted into it, the believers will be granted an ever greater prize — the greatest of all! Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَعَدَ اللَّهُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ وَالْمُؤْمِنَاتِ جَنَّاتٍ تَجْرِي مِنْ تَحْتِهَا الْأَنْهَارُ خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا وَمَسَاكِنَ طَيِّبَةً فِي جَنَّاتِ عَدْنٍ وَرِضْوَانٌ مِّنَ اللَّهِ أَكْبَرُ ذَٰلِكَ هُوَ الْفَوْزُ الْعَظِيمُ﴾ التوبة ٧٢

«Allaah has promised the believing men and women gardens beneath which rivers flow, in which they will live eternally, and blessed dwellings in the Gardens of Residence, and, greater than that, Allaah's acceptance — that is the supreme victory.» ²

This *aayah* tells us that even though the believers will feel most happy to be in *Jannah*, it is knowing that Allaah (ﷻ) is pleased with them that will give them the greatest satisfaction.

Together with Allaah's acceptance will come His greatest prize: He will make it possible and easy for them to see Him. Jareer Bin 'Abdillaah (رضي الله عنه) reported that he and other companions were with the Prophet (ﷺ) one night when the moon was full. The Prophet (ﷺ) looked up at the moon and then said:

1 Recorded by Muslim and Ahmad.

2 Soorat at-Tawbah 9:72.

«إنكم سترون ربكم كما ترون القمر ليلة البدر، لا تضامون في رؤيته.»

«You will surely see your Lord (in *Jannah*), just as you can now see this full moon. It will not hurt you to look at Him.»¹

Suhayb Bin Sinaan (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إذا دخل أهل الجنة الجنة، نادى مُنادٍ: "يا أهل الجنة، إن لكم عند الله موعداً يريد أن يُنجزكموه." فيقولون: "وما هو؟ ألم يُثقل الله موازيننا، ويبيضُ وجوهنا، ويدخلنا الجنة، ويُنجنا من النار؟" فيكشفُ الحجابُ، فينظرونَ إليه. فوالله ما أعطاهم الله شيئاً أحبَّ إليهم من النظرِ إليه، ولا أقرَّ لأعينهم.»

«When the people of *Jannah* enter it, a caller (from Allaah) will say to them, "O people of *Jannah*! Indeed, You have a promise with Allaah that He wants to fulfill for you." They will say, "What can it be? Has He not made our Scales heavy, brightened our faces, admitted us to *Jannah*, and saved us from the Fire?" The veil will then be removed (between Allaah and them), so they will be looking directly at Him. By Allaah, nothing of what Allaah previously gave them will be dearer to them or more satisfactory than looking at Him.»²

After that, the people of *Jannah* will continue enjoying this great pleasure of looking at the Lord (ﷻ) — may He (ﷻ) make

1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 Recorded by Ahmad, Ibn Maajah, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*Saheeh ul-Jaami'* no. 521). A similar *hadeeth* from Suhayb was recorded by Muslim.

us among them, *aameen*. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَجُوهٌ يَوْمَئِذٍ تَأْضِرُّهُ إِِلَىٰ رَبِّهَا نَاظِرَةٌ ﴿٢٢﴾﴾ القيامة ٢٢-٢٣

«On that Day, some faces will be beaming in happiness, looking at their Lord.»¹



Allaah will admit the righteous believers into shady gardens beneath which rivers flow.

¹ Soorat al-Qiyaamah 75:22-23.

Questions and Exercises



1. In the following table, check all true statements
(41 points):

	Statement	✓
a	The heavens are wider than <i>Jannah</i> and earth together.	
b	" <i>Jannah</i> " means "Garden".	
c	<i>Jannah</i> is surrounded by attractions.	
d	<i>Ar-Rayyaan</i> is the gate for those who prayed all night.	
e	The foods and drinks of <i>Jannah</i> are very similar to what we get from supermarkets.	
f	Some people will die in <i>Jannah</i> .	
g	No one will grow old in <i>Jannah</i> .	
h	The people in <i>Jannah</i> will never go to the toilet.	
i	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will be sad to see "death" slain.	
j	<i>Jannah</i> has eight gates.	
k	A gate of <i>Jannah</i> can admit only one person at a time.	
l	People will sometimes exit through the gates of <i>Jannah</i> .	
m	All people will be at the same level in <i>Jannah</i> .	
n	The Uppermost Paradise (<i>al-Firdaws ul-A'laa</i>) is the best place in <i>Jannah</i> .	
o	The rivers of <i>Jannah</i> gush out from the Throne.	
p	Those who strive for Allaah's cause will have a staircase of one hundred steps leading up to their house in <i>Jannah</i> .	

	Statement	✓
q	The Prophet Muhammad will be the first to enter <i>Jannah</i> .	
r	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will be tall.	
s	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will be of different ages.	
t	The sweat of the people of <i>Jannah</i> will smell good.	
u	The poor people will have to wait for the rich before they can enter <i>Jannah</i> .	
v	There are people who will burn in Hell and then go to <i>Jannah</i> .	
w	The poorest person in <i>Jannah</i> will only have a rented house.	
x	Some of the <i>Jannah</i> 's trees are quite huge.	
y	All of the <i>Jannah</i> 's trees have ivory stems.	
z	There are seas in <i>Jannah</i> .	
A	There is a river in <i>Jannah</i> for the Prophet (ﷺ).	
B	Entering <i>Jannah</i> will be the result of a person's performance in this life.	
C	True belief in Allaah is the most important requirement for entering <i>Jannah</i> .	
D	Some people refuse to enter <i>Jannah</i> .	
E	Lying jokingly is a good quality.	
F	The people of <i>Jannah</i> are mostly from the poor.	
G	Sometimes, the people of <i>Jannah</i> will become drunk from drinking wine.	

	Statement	✓
H	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will only say <i>tasbeeh</i> in the morning.	
I	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will have families and friends.	
J	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will have a lot of gold and silver.	
K	The people of <i>Jannah</i> will not eat meat.	
L	The people of <i>Jannah's</i> faces will shine with happiness.	
M	A scarf of a woman from <i>Jannah</i> is worth a gold coin from this life.	
N	The beauty of the people of <i>Jannah</i> will not increase.	
O	It is good to ask Allaah for <i>Jannah</i> three times.	

2. Mention eight names of *Jannah*, together with an *aayah* where each name is mentioned (16 points):

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8

3. Describe four of the contents of the *Jannah's* rivers (4 points):

1	3
2	4

4. Mention at least twelve qualities of those who will enter *Jannah* (12 points):

1	7
2	8
3	9
4	10
5	11
6	12

5. Describe at least ten pleasures of the people of *Jannah* (20 points):

1	6
2	7
3	8
4	9
5	10

6. Derive two excellent qualities of Jibreel from the *hadeeth* of the creation of *Jannah*. (4 points):

1
2

7. Describe the greatest pleasure in *Jannah* (3 points):

--

CHAPTER 5

HELL

Introducing Hell

WHAT IS HELL?

Jahannam (or Hell) is the place of great torture that Allaah (ﷻ) prepared for the disobedient and disbelieving people.

The texts of the Qur'aan and Sunnah tell us many of things about Hell. In this chapter, we explore some of this knowledge. This should increase our fear of Hell and make us earnestly implore Allaah to protect us and shelter us from all of its dangers, *aameen*.

Literally, "*Jahannam*" means "a very deep well". This name is given to Hell because it is extremely deep, as we will see below.

THE CREATION OF HELL

Hell was created before the creation of people, and Jibreel (ﷺ) was the first person to view it. In continuation of Aboo Hurayrah's *hadeeth* that we cited in the beginning of the last chapter, the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«فلَمَّا خَلَقَ اللهُ النَّارَ قَالَ: "يَا جِبْرِيلُ، اذْهَبْ فَانظُرْ إِلَيْهَا." فَذَهَبَ
فَنظَرَ إِلَيْهَا، ثُمَّ جَاءَ فَقَالَ: "أَيُّ رَبِّ، وَعِزَّتِكَ لَا يَسْمَعُ بِهَا أَحَدٌ
فِي دَخْلِهَا." فَحَقَّهَا بِالشَّهَوَاتِ ثُمَّ قَالَ: "يَا جِبْرِيلُ، اذْهَبْ فَانظُرْ
إِلَيْهَا." فَذَهَبَ فَانظَرَ إِلَيْهَا فَقَالَ: "أَيُّ رَبِّ، وَعِزَّتِكَ لَقَدْ خَشِيتُ

«أَلَّا يَبْقَى أَحَدٌ إِلَّا دَخَلَهَا.»

◁When Allaah created Hell, He told Jibreel, “O Jibreel, go look at it.” After looking at it, Jibreel came back and said, “O my Lord, by Your glory, no one who hears of it will enter it.”

So Allaah surrounded Hell with desires and then told Jibreel, “O Jibreel, now go look at it.” After looking at it, Jibreel came back and said, “O my Lord, by Your glory, I am afraid that none will be secure from entering it.”¹

This *hadeeth* tells us that Hell is so ugly and horrible that no person in his right senses would want to even approach it. But even though it is so horrible, it will be hard to avoid it because of the desires that surround it. Desires attract people to this venomous place — except for those who have clear sight and ability to distinguish between falsehood and truth.

Description of Hell

From all of Allaah’s creation that we know, Hell is, by far, the most hideous. It is ugly, dirty, gloomy, wrathful, painful, harmful, bottomless, and ruthless. Even the most terrifying monster that we ever imagined or dreamed of will not equal a brief moment in Hell.

ITS NAMES

Many descriptive names are used in the Qur’aan and Sunnah to refer to Hell. The following are some examples:

1 Recorded by Aboo Daawood, at-Tirmidhee, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaat* no. 5625).

- * *Jahannam* (the Bottomless Well) ¹
- * *An-Naar* (the Fire) ²
- * *Al-Jaheem* (the Blazing Fire) ³
- * *Saqar* (the Burner) ⁴
- * *As-Sa'eer* (the Blazing Flame) ⁵
- * *Daar ul-Bawaar* (the Abode of Destruction) ⁶
- * *Sijjeen* (the Prison) ⁷
- * *Al-Hutamah* (the Crusher) ⁸
- * *Lazaa* (the Raging Flame) ⁹

These names are descriptive because they describe various aspects of Hell's tortures that we will discuss below.

ITS ETERNITY

Hell will last eternally. There will be no end to its torture or its dwellers of the disbelievers. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَأَمَّا الَّذِينَ شَقُّوا فِي النَّارِ لَهُمْ فِيهَا زَفِيرٌ وَشَهِيقٌ ﴿١٠٦﴾
 خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا مَا دَامَتِ السَّمَوَاتُ وَالْأَرْضُ، إِلَّا مَا شَاءَ
 رَبُّكَ، إِنَّ رَبَّكَ فَعَّالٌ لِّمَا يُرِيدُ ﴿١٠٧﴾﴾

«As for those who will have brought misery upon themselves, they will be in the Fire, and will have therein moans and sobs. They will abide therein as long as the heavens and the

1 As in Soorat an-Naba' 78:21.

2 As in Soorat Ghaafir 40:46.

3 As in Soorat ash-Shu'araa' 26:91.

4 As in Soorat al-Muddathir 74:42.

5 As in Soorat al-Mulk 67:10.

6 As in Soorat Ibraaheem 14:28.

7 As in Soorat al-Mutaffifeen 83:7.

8 As in Soorat al-Humazah 104:4.

9 As in Soorat al-Ma'aarij 70:15.

earth stand — except if your Lord should will differently. Indeed, your Lord is the Accomplisher of what He wills.»¹

According to scholars, the exception in this *aayah* refers to believers who committed major sins for which they need to be punished before entering *Jannah*.²

ITS GATES

Hell has seven gates. Each of its miserable dwellers will be assigned a gate through which to be admitted (or shoved). Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَأَنَّ جَهَنَّمَ لَمَوْعِدُهُمْ أَجْمَعِينَ لَهَا سَبْعَةُ أَبْوَابٍ،
لِكُلِّ بَابٍ مِنْهُمْ جُزْءٌ مَّقْسُومٌ﴾ الحجر ٤٣-٤٤

«And indeed, for all of them (Satan's followers), Hell is the promised goal. It has seven gates, each gate receiving a designated portion of them.»³

Allaah (ﷻ) also tells us that, after Judgment, the disbelievers will be driven in groups to enter the gates of Hell. Allaah says:

﴿وَسِيقَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا إِلَىٰ جَهَنَّمَ زُمَرًا، حَتَّىٰ إِذَا جَاءُوهَا فَتَحَتْ
أَبْوَابُهَا، وَقَالَ لَهُمْ خَزَنَتُهَا: "أَلَمْ يَأْتِكُمْ رُسُلٌ مِنْكُمْ يَتْلُونَ عَلَيْكُمْ
آيَاتِ رَبِّكُمْ وَيُنذِرُونَكُمْ لِقَاءَ يَوْمِكُمْ هَذَا؟" قَالُوا: "بَلَىٰ! وَلَكِنْ
حَقَّتْ كَلِمَةُ الْعَذَابِ عَلَى الْكَافِرِينَ" قِيلَ: "أَدْخُلُوا أَبْوَابَ جَهَنَّمَ
خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا، فَبِئْسَ مَثْوَى الْمُتَكَبِّرِينَ."﴾ الزمر ٧١-٧٢

1 Soorat Hood 11:106-107.

2 These were discussed in the previous chapter (p. 117).

3 Soorat al-Hijr 15:43-44.

«And those who disbelieved will be driven to Hell in groups until, when they reach it, its gates will be opened and its keepers will ask them, “Did there not come to you messengers from among yourselves, reciting to you your Lord’s messages and warning you of the coming of this Day of yours?” They will say, “Yes, indeed!” But the sentence of punishment will already have fallen due upon the disbelievers. They will be told, “Enter the gates of Hell to abide eternally therein. Miserable, then, is the residence of the arrogant.”»¹

ITS EXPANSE

Hell is vast beyond description. We will see below that a dweller of Hell will be blown up in size to be as wide as the distance from al-Madeenah to Makkah. Since Hell will accommodate all disbelievers who ever lived on earth, it must be immensely huge.

In addition, Hell is an extremely deep abyss. Aboo Moosaa al-Ash’aree (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«لو أن حجراً يُقذَفُ به في جهنم، هوى سبعين خريفاً قبل أن يبلغَ قعرها.»

«If a rock is thrown in Hell, it would take seventy years to reach the bottom.»²

ITS RAGE AND GREED

Allaah (ﷻ) tells us that Hell can see and talk! It will rage furiously at the sight of the disbelievers. It will act like a predator sighting its prey. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

1 Soorat az-Zumar 39:71-72.

2 Recorded by Aboo Ya’laa, Ibn Hibbaan, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 2165).

﴿بَلْ كَذَّبُوا بِالسَّاعَةِ، وَأَعْتَدْنَا لِمَنْ كَذَّبَ بِالسَّاعَةِ سَعِيرًا ﴿١١﴾ إِذَا رَأَتْهُمْ مِّن مَّكَانٍ بَعِيدٍ سَمِعُوا لَهَا تَغِيْظًا وَزَفِيرًا ﴿١٢﴾ وَإِذَا أُلْقُوا مِنْهَا مَكَانًا ضَيِّقًا مُّقْرَنِينَ دَعَوْا هُنَالِكَ ثُبُورًا ﴿١٣﴾ لَا تَدْعُوا الْيَوْمَ ثُبُورًا وَاحِدًا، وَأَدْعُوا ثُبُورًا كَثِيرًا.﴾ ﴿١٤﴾ الفرقان ١١-١٤

«But they have denied the Hour, and We have prepared for those who deny the Hour a Blazing Fire. When it (i.e. Hell) will see them from a distance, they will hear its furious roaring and hiss. And when they are thrown into a tight place within, bound together in chains, they will then cry out for their destruction. (But they will be told,) “This Day, do not cry out for destruction only one time, but cry out for it many times.”» ¹

Furthermore, even after all disbelievers will have been thrown into Hell, it will not become satisfied but will continue to demand more. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوْمَ نَقُولُ لِجَهَنَّمَ: “هَلْ أَمْتَلَأْتِ؟” وَتَقُولُ: “هَلْ مِنْ مَّزِيدٍ؟”﴾ ﴿٣٠﴾ ق

«(Judgment will be final) on the Day when We will say unto Hell, “Are you satisfied?” And it will say, “Are there any more?”» ²

Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that Allaah’s Messenger (ﷺ) said:

«لا تزال جهنمُ يُلقى فيها، وهي تقول: “هل من مزيد؟” حتى يضع ربُّ العزة عليها قدمه، فينزوي بعضها إلى بعض، وتقول: “قطّ، قطّ، وعزتك.”»

«(As more people are thrown into it,) Hell will

1 Soorat al-Furqaan 25:11-14.

2 Soorat Qaaf 50:30.

continue to say, "Are there any more?" Finally, the Lord of dignity will place His foot over it. It will then shrink down and say, "(I have) enough, (I have) enough — by Your Honor.> ¹

This tells us that there will be a place in Hell for every disbeliever. It will be raging with greed and hunger and will continue to ask for more — until Allaah makes it stop. ²

ITS INTENSITY AND FUEL

The fire of Hell is much more intense than the fire that we know. The fire of this world is intense enough to wipe out forests, towns, and people. Even a short exposure to it can cause serious damage to the human body.



The fire of Hell is seventy times stronger than our fire. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«نَارُكُمْ هَذِهِ جُزْءٌ مِنْ سَبْعِينَ جُزْءٍ مِنْ نَارِ جَهَنَّمَ.»

«This fire of yours is only one of seventy parts of the fire of Hell.» ³

The fire of Hell even uses people and stones as fuel. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا قُوا أَنْفُسَكُمْ وَأَهْلِيكُمْ نَارًا وَقُودُهَا النَّاسُ وَالْحِجَارَةُ عَلَيْهَا مَلَائِكَةٌ غِلَاظٌ شِدَادٌ لَا يَعْصُونَ اللَّهَ مَا أَمَرَهُمْ وَيَفْعَلُونَ مَا يُؤْمَرُونَ ﴿٦﴾ التحريم ٦

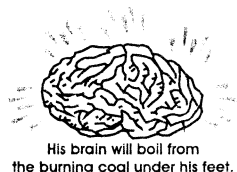
1 This *hadeeth* was recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 For further discussion of this, see the first book of this series: "Knowing Allaah".

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

«O you who believe, protect yourselves and your families from a Fire whose fuel is people and stones. Appointed over it are harsh and severe angels who do not disobey Allaah in what He commands them but do (precisely) what they are commanded.»¹

ITS LEVELS OF TORTURE



The inhabitants of Hell will vary in their amount of punishment. The person of lightest punishment in Hell² will have his brain boiling from its heat. An-Nu'maan Bin Basheer (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنَّ أَهْوَنَ أَهْلِ النَّارِ عَذَاباً يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ لَرَجُلٌ تَوَضَّعُ
فِي أَحْمَصِ قَدَمِيهِ جَمْرَةً يَغْلِي مِنْهَا دِمَاغُهُ.»

«Indeed, on Judgment Day, the least in punishment among the people of the Fire will be a man who will have a burning coal placed under his feet causing his brain to boil.»³

Also, disbelievers who deter others from obeying Allaah will receive more punishment than simple disbelievers. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا وَصَدُّوا عَن سَبِيلِ اللَّهِ زِدْنَاهُمْ عَذَاباً فَوْقَ
الْعَذَابِ بِمَا كَانُوا يُفْسِدُونَ» ﴿النحل ٨٨﴾

«For those who disbelieve and avert others from

1 Soorat at-Tahreem 66:6.

2 It is reported by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim from Aboo Sa'eed al-Khudree that this person is Aboo Taalib, the Prophet's (ﷺ) uncle.

3 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree.

Allaah's path, We will apply punishment upon punishment for all the corruption that they caused.»¹

Among the worst of those who deterred from Allaah's path were Pharaoh and his people. Therefore, they will receive a most severe amount of punishment. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَيَوْمَ تَقُومُ السَّاعَةُ، "أَدْخِلُوا آلَ فِرْعَوْنَ أَشَدَّ الْعَذَابِ."﴾ غافر ٤٦

«On the Day when the Last Hour arrives (Allaah will say), "Admit Pharaoh's people into the most severe punishment."»²

Similar to Pharaoh is any tyrant who uses the power that Allaah gave him to oppress people and turn them away from Allaah's path. Individuals like this will also receive the worst punishment in Hell. Khaalid Bin al-Waleed (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أشدُّ الناسِ عذاباً عندَ اللهِ يومَ القيامةِ
أشدُّهم عذاباً للناسِ في الدنيا.»

«The people who will be most severely punished by Allaah on Judgment Day are those who torment other people the most in the first life.»³

The hypocrites deceive the believers by claiming to be part of them. They gain their trust only to harm them. For this reason, their punishment will be the worst. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

1 Soorat an-Nahl 16:88.

2 Soorat Ghaafir 40:46.

3 Recorded by Ahmad, al-Haakim, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 1442).

﴿إِنَّ الْمُنَافِقِينَ فِي الدَّرَكِ الْأَسْفَلِ مِنَ النَّارِ،
وَلَنْ تَجِدَ لَهُمْ نَصِيرًا﴾ ﴿النساء ١٤٥﴾

«Indeed, the hypocrites will be in the lowest depths of the Fire — and never will you find for them a helper.»¹

ITS GUARDS

The guards of Hell keep it hot and burning for the evil people. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَلْيَدْعُ نَادِيَهُ ﴿١٧﴾ سَدْعُ الزَّبَانِيَةِ ﴿١٨﴾﴾ العلق ١٧-١٨

«Then let him (Aboo Jahl) call upon his helpers. We will call the guards of Hell (to deal with him).»²

The guards of Hell will have no regard or sympathy toward its inhabitants. Rather, they will be harsh and severe, as Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿عَلَيْهَا مَلَائِكَةٌ غِلَاظٌ شِدَادٌ لَا يَعْصُونَ اللَّهَ مَا
أَمَرَهُمْ وَيَفْعَلُونَ مَا يُؤْمَرُونَ﴾ ﴿التحریم ٦﴾

«Appointed over it are harsh and severe angels who do not disobey Allaah in what He commands them but do (precisely) what they are commanded.»³

The leader of Hell's guards is called Maalik. He will not be

1 Soorat al-Baqarah 4:145.

2 Soorat al-'Alaq 96:17-18.

3 Soorat at-Tahreem 66:6.

any less harsh than his helpers. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَنَادُوا: "يَمْلِكُ لِيَقْضَ عَلَيْنَا رَبُّكَ." قَالَ: "إِنَّكُمْ مَكِيدُونَ." ﴿٧٧﴾
 لَقَدْ جِئْنَاكُمْ بِالْحَقِّ وَلَكِنَّ أَكْثَرَكُمْ لِلْحَقِّ كَارِهُونَ ﴿٧٨﴾﴾

الزخرف ٧٧-٧٨

«And they (the people of Hell) will cry, "O Maalik! Let your Lord make an end of us." He will say, "You will stay!" Indeed, We brought the truth to you, but most of you have a hatred for the truth.»¹

Who Will Enter Hell?

ALL PEOPLE

Allaah (ﷻ) tells us that all people — even pious believers — will enter Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَإِن مِّنْكُمْ إِلَّا وَارِدُهَا، كَانَ عَلَىٰ رَبِّكَ حَتْمًا مَّقْضِيًّا ﴿٧١﴾ ثُمَّ
 نُجِّي الَّذِينَ اتَّقَوْا وَنَذَرُ الظَّالِمِينَ فِيهَا جِثِيًّا ﴿٧٢﴾﴾

«There is none among you but will enter it (i.e., Hell); this is, upon your Lord, a decree that must be fulfilled. We will then save those who safeguarded (Allaah's boundaries) and will leave in it the wrongdoers, on their knees.»²

As for the righteous believers, their entering of Hell refers to the passage over the *Siraat* that we discussed earlier. Since the

1 Soorat az-Zukhruf 43:77-78.

2 Soorat Maryam 19:71.

Siraat will be erected over Hell, all believers will then pass through Hell. As we saw earlier, however, the true believers will quickly pass through it, like an eye's blinking, lightning, swift horses, and so on. Those will not be touched by any of its harms. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَسِيْجَنَّبُهَا الْأَتْقَى ۖ الَّذِي يُؤْتِي مَالَهُ، يَتَزَكَّىٰ ۖ وَمَا لِأَحَدٍ عِنْدَهُ،

مِنْ نُّعْمَةٍ تُجْزَىٰ ۖ إِلَّا أَتْبَغَاۗءَ وَجْهِ رَبِّهِ الْأَعْلَىٰ﴾ الليل ۱۷-۲۰

«But sheltered from it will be he who is truly pious, he who gives away from his wealth to purify himself — not for repaying anyone's favors, but only seeking the face of his Lord, the Most High.»¹

As for lesser believers, they will be slightly burnt or scratched by Hell, others more seriously hit, and others (the hypocrites) will fall straight down into it.

MOST PEOPLE

Most people will abide eternally in Hell! This is because the majority of people are non-believers. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَمَا أَكْثَرُ النَّاسِ، وَلَوْ حَرَصْتَ، بِمُؤْمِنِينَ﴾ يوسف ۱۰۳

«Even though you strongly desire it, most people are not believers.»²

'Imraan Bin Husayn (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«ينادي الربُّ آدمَ فيقول: "يا آدمُ، أخرجْ بعثِ النارِ من

1 Soorat al-Layl 92:17-20.

2 Soorat Yoosof 12:103.

ذُرِّيَّتِكَ.“ فيقول: ”يا رب، وما بعثُ النار؟“ فيقول: ”من كل ألفٍ تِسْعُمِائَةٌ وَتِسْعَةٌ وَتَسْعُونَ إِلَى النَّارِ وَوَاحِدٌ فِي الْجَنَّةِ.“

«(On Judgment Day,) the Lord will say to Aadam, “O Aadam, separate the Fire’s delegation from among your descendants.” Aadam will ask, “O my Lord, what is the Fire’s delegation?” Allaah will answer, “From each thousand, nine hundred and ninety-nine are to the Fire, and one to *Jannah*.”»¹

This means that Aadam will be told which people deserve to go to Hell. Allaah will then command Aadam to take them aside so as to be thrown into the Fire.

When the *sahaabah* heard this from the Prophet (ﷺ), they became quite alarmed, but he calmed them down by telling them that this high percentage of people going to Hell is largely composed of the enormous nations of Gog and Magog².

THOSE WHO REJECT THE FAITH

The only sin that will cause a person to abide eternally in Hell is *kufur* (disbelief), which means: rejecting the belief in Allaah after knowing the truth. Such people will have no chance of entering *Jannah*. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ كَذَّبُوا بِآيَاتِنَا وَاسْتَكْبَرُوا عَنْهَا لَا تُفَتِّحُ لَهُمْ أَبْوَابُ السَّمَاءِ وَلَا يَدْخُلُونَ الْجَنَّةَ حَتَّىٰ يَلِجَ الْجَمَلُ فِي سَمِّ الْخِيَاطِ، وَكَذَلِكَ نَجْزِي الْمُجْرِمِينَ﴾ ﴿الأعراف ٤٠﴾

«Indeed, those who deny Our messages and are

1 Recorded by al-Bukhaaree, Muslim, and others.

2 This is recorded by al-Bukhaaree and Muslim from Aboo Tharr (رضي الله عنه).

arrogant toward them — the gates of Heaven will not be opened for them, nor will they enter *Jannah* until a camel enters into a needle's eye ¹. Thus do We recompense the wicked.» ²

Kufr or disbelief does not simply mean denial that Allaah is the Creator and Lord of the creation. Even if a person admits to this but rejects to believe in Allaah's supreme qualities, or denies that Allaah (ﷻ) is the only true God to be worshiped ³, or rejects the message of the Prophet Muhammad (ﷺ) ⁴ — such a person would still be a disbeliever who will abide eternally in Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

«أَلْقِيَا فِي جَهَنَّمَ كُلَّ كَفَّارٍ عَنِيدٍ ❁ مَنَّاعٍ لِلْخَيْرِ مُعْتَدٍ
 مُرِيبٍ ❁ الَّذِي جَعَلَ مَعَ اللَّهِ إِلَهًا آخَرَ، فَأَلْقِيَاهُ فِي
 الْعَذَابِ الشَّدِيدِ.» ❁ ق ٢٤-٢٦

«(Allaah will say to the angels,) "Throw into Hell every obstinate disbeliever, withholder of good, aggressor, promoter of doubt, who joined with Allaah another god: throw him then into the severe punishment."» ⁵

The disbelievers live in this life like cattle, running after their bodily needs and pleasures while neglecting the most important goal and enjoyment of all: true servitude to the Lord of the

1 Since a needle's eye is so tiny that even a small ant cannot easily go through it, certainly a camel can never go through it. By describing this impossible situation, Allaah (ﷻ) wants us to visualize how impossible it is for the disbelievers to ever enter *Jannah*.

2 *Soorat al-A'raaf* 7:40.

3 These issues are discussed in detail in the first book of this series: "Knowing Allaah".

4 This is discussed in the fourth book of this series: "Knowing the Prophets".

5 *Soorat Qaaf* 50:24-26.

worlds. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَالَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا يَتَمَتَّعُونَ وَيَأْكُلُونَ كَمَا تَأْكُلُ الْأَنْعَامُ

وَالنَّارُ مَثْوًى لَّهُمْ ﴿١٢﴾ محمد ﷺ

«As for the disbelievers, they enjoy themselves now and eat like cattle, but the Fire will be their permanent home.»¹

In fact, the disbelievers are worse than cattle. Allaah (ﷻ) gave them faculties to help them see the truth and save themselves from Hell, but they chose to disable those faculties. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَلَقَدْ ذَرَأْنَا لِجَهَنَّمَ كَثِيرًا مِّنَ الْجِنِّ وَالإِنْسِ، لَهُمْ قُلُوبٌ لَا يَفْقَهُونَ

بِهَا وَلَهُمْ أَعْيُنٌ لَا يُبْصِرُونَ بِهَا وَلَهُمْ آذَانٌ لَا يَسْمَعُونَ بِهَا، أُولَئِكَ

كَالْأَنْعَامِ بَلْ هُمْ أَضَلُّ، أُولَئِكَ هُمُ الْغَافِلُونَ ﴿١٧٩﴾ الأعراف

«And We have certainly created for Hell many *jinn*s and humans. They have hearts with which they do not understand, and eyes with which they do not see, and ears with which they do not hear. Those are like cattle — rather, more astray. It is they who are reckless.»²

THE HYPOCRITES

The disbelievers include the hypocrites who will reside in the bottom of Hell. We again site the *aayah*:

﴿إِنَّ الْمُنَافِقِينَ فِي الدَّرَكِ الْأَسْفَلِ مِنَ النَّارِ، وَلَنْ تَجِدَ لَهُمْ نَصِيرًا ﴿١٤٥﴾ النساء

1 Soorat Muhammad 47:12.

2 Soorat al-A'raaf 7:179.

«Indeed, the hypocrites will be in the lowest depths of the Fire — and never will you find for them a helper.»¹

SATAN AND HIS SUPPORTERS

Judgment Day will end the respite that Allaah (ﷻ) allowed to Satan so as to try people with his temptations and deceit. Satan will then be thrown to Hell together with all his soldiers and followers.

Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَوَرَبِّكَ لَنَحْشُرُهُمْ وَالشَّيَاطِينَ، ثُمَّ لَنَحْضِرَهُمْ

حَوْلَ جَهَنَّمَ حِثْيًا﴾ مريم ٦٨

«So by your Lord, We will surely assemble them, together with the devils. We will then surely gather them all, on their knees, around Hell.»²

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَكُذِّبُوا فِيهَا هُمْ وَالْغَاوُونَ وَالْجُنُودُ ابْلِيسَ أَجْمَعُونَ﴾ الشعراء ٩٤-٩٥

«So they (the idolaters and their idols) will be overturned into it (i.e. Hell), together with the corrupt, as well as all of Satan's soldiers.»³

THOSE WHO COMMIT MAJOR SINS

We saw earlier (p. 117) that many believers who commit major sins and die without repenting will be punished in Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

1 Soorat al-Baqarah 4:145.

2 Soorat Maryam 19:68.

3 Soorat ash-Shu'araa' 26:94-95.

﴿وَالَّذِينَ لَا يَدْعُونَ مَعَ اللَّهِ إِلَهًا آخَرَ، وَلَا يَقْتُلُونَ النَّفْسَ الَّتِي حَرَّمَ اللَّهُ إِلَّا بِالْحَقِّ، وَلَا يَزْنُونَ، وَمَنْ يَفْعَلْ ذَلِكَ يَلْقَ أَثَامًا ﴿٦٨﴾ يُضَاعَفُ لَهُ الْعَذَابُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ وَيَخْلُدُ فِيهِ مُهَانًا ﴿٦٩﴾﴾ الفرقان ٦٨-٦٩

«And those who invoke no other god with Allaah, neither do they kill the soul that Allaah has sanctified — except in a rightful manner, neither do they commit adultery. Whoever should do any of these evils will face a penalty: his punishment will be multiplied on Resurrection Day, and he will abide in it humiliated.» ¹

In this *aayah*, *shirk* (joining other gods with Allaah) is mentioned first because it leads to eternal punishment in Hell. Murder, *zinaa* (adultery), and other major sins only lead to eternal punishment if they are mixed with *shirk*. Otherwise, their punishment will only be temporary (though terrible) in Hell.

There are numerous texts in the Qur'aan and Sunnah expressing punishment in Hell for those who commit various kinds of major sins, such as lying against the Messenger (ﷺ), arrogance, taking *riba* (usury), making statues and pictures of humans or animals, torturing animals, committing suicide, and so on.

In the following two subsections, we discuss other sins that lead to Hell, which can sometimes reaching the level of *shirk*.

THOSE WHO DISOBEY ALLAAH AND HIS MESSENGER

Allaah (ﷻ) sent His Messenger (ﷺ) to show people how to avoid Hell. Therefore, those who disobey Allaah (ﷻ) or His Messenger (ﷺ) would, in effect, be stubbornly heading toward Hell, and will surely end up in it. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

¹ Soorat al-Furqaan 25:68-69.

﴿قُلْ إِنِّي أَخَافُ إِنْ عَصَيْتُ رَبِّي عَذَابَ يَوْمٍ عَظِيمٍ﴾ الأنعام ١٥

«Say, "Indeed I fear, if I should disobey my Lord, the punishment of a tremendous Day."»¹

And He (ﷺ) says:

﴿وَمَنْ يُشَاقِقِ الرَّسُولَ مِنْ بَعْدِ مَا تَبَيَّنَ لَهُ الْهُدَىٰ، وَيَتَّبِعْ غَيْرَ سَبِيلِ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ، نُوَلِّهِ مَا تَوَلَّىٰ، وَنُصَلِّهِ جَهَنَّمَ، وَسَاءَتْ مَصِيرًا﴾ النساء ١١٥

«For him who, after guidance has become clear to him, opposes the Messenger and follows other than the believers's path: We will give him what he has chosen and shove him into Hell — an evil destination indeed.»²

This *ayah* indicates that part of obeying the Messenger (ﷺ) is to follow the path of his companions. This is the way of the *Jamaa'ah* (the true group of Muslims). Anyone who rejects it would also be liable to punishment in Hell.

Mu'aawiyah Bin Abee Sufyaan (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«أَلَا إِنَّ مَنْ قَبْلَكُمْ مِنْ أَهْلِ الْكِتَابِ أَفْتَرَقُوا عَلَى ثَنْتَيْنِ وَسَبْعِينَ مِلَّةً، وَإِنَّ هَذِهِ الْأُمَّةَ سَتَفْتَرِقُ عَلَى ثَلَاثٍ وَسَبْعِينَ، ثَنْتَانِ وَسَبْعُونَ فِي النَّارِ، وَوَاحِدَةٌ فِي الْجَنَّةِ، وَهِيَ الْجَمَاعَةُ.»

«Indeed, the People of the Scripture who preceded you divided into seventy-two sects; and indeed, this *Ummah* will divide into seventy-three, of which seventy-two will be in Hell, and

1 Soorat al-An'aam 6:15.

2 Soorat an-Nisaa' 4:115.

only one will go to *Jannah*, which is the *Jamaa'ah*.»¹

THOSE WHO LIKE TO CORRUPT THE BELIEVERS

There are wicked people who dislike to see virtuous believers. In addition to their personal corruption, their diseased hearts call them to spread corruption all around them. Such people will have a severe punishment in Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ يُحِبُّونَ أَنْ تَشِيعَ الْفُحُشَةُ فِي الَّذِينَ ءَامَنُوا لَهُمْ عَذَابٌ أَلِيمٌ فِي الدُّنْيَا وَالْآخِرَةِ.﴾ النور ١٩

«Indeed, those who like that immorality should spread among the believers will have a painful punishment in the first and last lives.»²

Agonies of the People of Hell!

THEIR “LIVING”

The people of Hell will not be allowed to die and rest, because death will have already been slain in front of their eyes (see p. 112). Thus, they will live an eternal life of misery and humiliation — a life worse than death! Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَالَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا لَهُمْ نَارُ جَهَنَّمَ، لَا يُقْضَىٰ عَلَيْهِمْ فَيَمُوتُوا، وَلَا يُخَفَّفُ عَنْهُمْ مِّنْ عَذَابِهَا، كَذَٰلِكَ نَجْزِي كُلَّ كَافِرٍ﴾ فاطر ٣٦

«And for the disbelievers will be the fire of Hell.

1 Recorded by Ahmad, Abou Daawood, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 204).

2 *Soorat an-Noor* 24:19.

Neither will they be finished so that they could die, nor will its torment be lightened for them. Thus will We recompense every ungrateful person.»¹

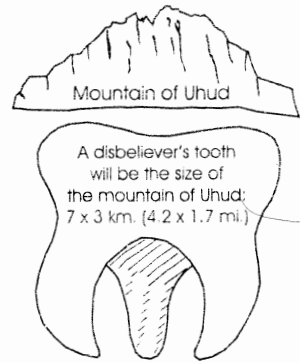
And He (ﷺ) says:

﴿وَيَتَجَنَّبُهَا الْأَشْقَى الَّذِي يَصْلَى النَّارَ الْكُبْرَى﴾
 ثُمَّ لَا يَمُوتُ فِيهَا وَلَا يَحْيَى﴾ (الأعلى ١١-١٣)

«But it (the remembrance) will be avoided by the most miserable: those who will be scorched by the great Fire, in which they will neither die nor live.»²

THEIR SIZE

The people of Hell will be of gigantic size. The vast amount of skin that will cover their enormous bodies, and the immense thickness of their skin, will cause them a greater exposure to the Fire and, consequently, much more pain. Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:



«ضرس الكافر مثل أحد، وغلظ جلده مسيرة ثلاث.»

«A disbeliever's molar tooth will be (in Hell) as large as the mountain of Uhud. And his skin will be as thick as a three nights' travel distance.»³

And Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

1 Soorat Faatir 35:36.

2 Soorat al-A'laa 87:11-13.

3 Recorded by Muslim, at-Tirmithee, and others.

«ما بين مَنْكَبَيْ الكَافِرِ في النار مَسِيرَةُ ثَلَاثَةِ أَيَّامٍ لِلرَّكَّابِ المُسْرِعِ.»

«The distance between a disbeliever's shoulders will be (in Hell) like a three days' travel distance for a fast rider.»¹

And Aboo Hurayrah (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:

«إِنَّ غِلَظَ جِلْدِ الكَافِرِ اثْنَانِ وَأَرْبَعُونَ ذِرَاعًا بِذِرَاعِ الجِبَارِ، وَإِنَّ ضِرْسَهُ مِثْلُ أُحُدٍ، وَإِنَّ مَجْلِسَهُ مِنْ جَهَنَّمَ كَمَا بَيْنَ مَكَّةَ وَالْمَدِينَةِ.»

«Indeed, the thickness of a disbeliever's skin (in Hell) will be forty-two cubits² measured by a giant's arm³. And his seat in Hell will be like the distance between Makkah and al-Madeenah.»⁴

Despite their thickness, the skins of the disbelievers will be completely burnt in Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَمَا أَدْرَاكَ مَا سَقَرُ؟ لَا يُبْقِي وَلَا تَذَرُ﴾

﴿لَوَاحِةً لِّلْبَشَرِ﴾ المدثر ٢٧-٢٩

«And what can make you conceive what the Burner is? It spares none, nor does it leave anything (unburned). It scorches the skins.»⁵

Those vast and thick skins will continuously be renewed so

1 Recorded by Muslim.

2 A cubit is the distance from a person's elbow to his finger-tips.

3 This means that the cubits are not normal arm-lengths by our standards, but are arm-lengths of huge angels or other gigantic beings.

4 Recorded by Ahmad, at-Tirmidhee, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*as-Saheehah* no. 1105).

5 *Soorat al-Muddathir* 74:27-29.

that the disbelievers will continue to taste the pain. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا بِآيَاتِنَا سَوْفَ نُصَلِّيهِمْ نَارًا، كُلَّمَا نَضِجَتْ جُلُودُهُمْ بَدَّلْنَاهُمْ جُلُودًا غَيْرَهَا لِيَذُوقُوا الْعَذَابَ، إِنَّ اللَّهَ كَانَ عَزِيزًا حَكِيمًا﴾ النساء ٥٦

«As for those who reject Our messages, We will surely shove them into the Fire: as often as their skins are roasted through, We will replace them with fresh skins so that they may taste the penalty. Indeed, Allaah is Powerful and Wise.»¹

The disbelievers' skins are specifically mentioned here because the skin contains nerves that make a person feel the pain. If their skin is completely burnt without being replaced, they would stop feeling the pain. But they will not be given such a favor!

THEIR FOOD AND DRINK

The people of Hell will eat and drink, but what kind of food and drink! Their food will not satisfy their hunger, and their drink will not quench their thirst — rather, they will both add to their pain and suffering. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿لَيْسَ لَهُمْ طَعَامٌ إِلَّا مِنْ ضَرِيعٍ لَا يُسْمِنُ
وَلَا يُغْنِي مِنَ الْجُوعِ﴾ الغاشية ٦-٧

«They will receive no food, except a poisonous and thorny plant that neither nourishes nor avails against hunger.»²

1 Soorat an-Nisaa' 4:56.

2 Soorat al-Ghaashiyah 88:6-7.

One of their worst foods will be *zaqqoom* (or deadly fruit). Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿أَذَلِكْ حَيْرٌ نُّزْلاً أَمْ شَجَرَةُ الزُّقُومِ؟ ﴿٦٦﴾ إِنَّا جَعَلْنَاهَا فِتْنَةً لِلظَّالِمِينَ ﴿٦٧﴾
 إِنَّهَا شَجَرَةٌ تَخْرُجُ فِي أَصْلِ الْجَحِيمِ ﴿٦٨﴾ طَلْعُهَا كَأَنَّهُ رِئُوسُ
 الشَّيْطَانِ ﴿٦٩﴾ فَإِنَّهُمْ لَأَكَلُونَ مِنْهَا فَمَالُؤْنَ مِنْهَا الْبُطُونَ ﴿٧٠﴾ ثُمَّ إِنَّ
 لَهُمْ عَلَيْهَا لَشَوْبًا مِّنْ حَمِيمٍ ﴿٧١﴾﴾ الصافات ٦٢-٦٧

«Is that (*Jannah*) a better accommodation or the tree of *zaqqoom*? Indeed, We have made it a torment for the wrongdoers. And indeed, it is a tree issuing from the bottom of the Hellfire. The shoots of its fruit-stalks are like the heads of devils. And indeed, they will eat from it and fill with it their bellies. Then indeed, on top of that they will have a mixture (to drink) made of boiling fluids.»¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ شَجَرَةَ الزُّقُومِ ﴿٤٣﴾ طَعَامٌ أَلْأَثِيمِ ﴿٤٤﴾ كَالْمُهْلِ يَغْلِي فِي الْبُطُونِ ﴿٤٥﴾ كَغَلِيِّ
 الْحَمِيمِ ﴿٤٦﴾ ”حُدُوهُ فَاعْتَلُوهُ إِلَىٰ سَوَاءِ الْجَحِيمِ ﴿٤٧﴾ ثُمَّ صُبُّوا فَوْقَ رَأْسِهِ مِنْ
 عَذَابِ الْحَمِيمِ.“ ﴿٤٨﴾ ”ذُقْ، إِنَّكَ أَنْتَ الْعَزِيزُ الْكَرِيمُ.“ ﴿٤٩﴾﴾ الدخان ٤٣-٤٩

«Indeed, the tree of *zaqqoom* will be the food of the sinful. Like molten lead will it boil in the belly, like the boiling of scalding water. (It will be commanded,) “Seize him and drag him into the midst of the blazing fire, then pour over his head from the torment of scalding water.” (He

1 Soorat as-Saaffaat 37:62-67.

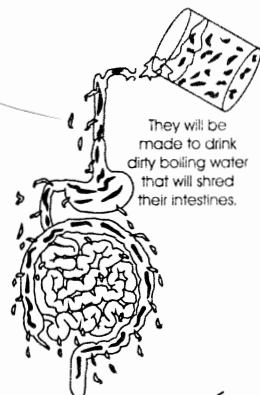
will be told,) "Taste it — you (who have considered yourself) so mighty and noble!"»¹

In addition to its extreme heat, their food will be filthy. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَلَيْسَ لَهُ الْيَوْمَ هَاهُنَا حَمِيمٌ ﴿٣٥﴾ وَلَا طَعَامٌ إِلَّا مِنْ غِسْلِينٍ ﴿٣٦﴾ لَا يَأْكُلُهُ إِلَّا الْخَاطِئُونَ ﴿٣٧﴾﴾ الحاقة ٣٥-٣٧

«So, this Day, he (the disbeliever) will have no friend, nor any food — except the filth that only the sinners eat.»²

Furthermore, their drink will be so hot that it will burn and cut their stomach and intestines to pieces. And when they beg for something to cool down their roasting bodies, they will only receive more dirty boiling water on their heads and faces that will add to their agony. Allaah (ﷻ) says:



﴿كَمَنْ هُوَ خَالِدٌ فِي النَّارِ، وَسُقُوا مَاءً حَمِيمًا فَقَطَّعَ أَمْعَاءَهُمْ؟ ﴿١٥﴾﴾ محمد ١٥

«Can this (the drinks of *Jannah*) be compared to those who will abide eternally in the Fire and will be given to drink boiling water that will shred their intestines?»³

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَإِنْ يَسْتَعْجِلُوا يُغَاثُوا بِمَاءٍ كَالْمُهْلِ يَشْوِي الْوُجُوهُ، بِئْسَ الشَّرَابُ وَسَاءَتْ مُرْتَفَقًا ﴿٢٩﴾﴾ الكهف ٢٩

1 Soorat ad-Dukhaan 44:43-49.

2 Soorat al-Haaqqah 69:35-37.

3 Soorat Muhammad 47:15.

«And if they call for relief, they will be relieved with water like molten lead that will scald their faces. Wretched is the drink, and evil is the resting place.»¹

THEIR ATTIRE

While the people of *Jannah* will be enjoying splendid garments and lavish jewelry, the people of Hell will be confined in garments of fire and iron shackles and chains. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿هَٰذَانِ حَصْمَانٍ آخْتَصِمُوا فِي رَبِّهِمْ، فَالَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا قُطِّعَتْ لَهُمْ
ثِيَابٌ مِّنْ نَّارٍ يُصَبُّ مِنْ فَوْقِ رُءُوسِهِمُ الْحَمِيمُ﴾ ﴿الحج ١٩﴾

«These two opponents (believers and non-believers) dispute about their Lord. As for the non-believers, garments of fire will be cut out for them, and scalding water will be poured over their heads.»²

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿أُولَٰئِكَ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا بِرَبِّهِمْ، وَأُولَٰئِكَ الْأَغْلُلُ فِي أَعْنَاقِهِمْ،
وَأُولَٰئِكَ أَصْحَابُ النَّارِ هُمْ فِيهَا خَالِدُونَ﴾ ﴿الرعد ٥﴾

«Those (deniers of Resurrection) are the ones who have disbelieved in their Lord, and those will have shackles upon their necks, and those are the people of the Fire wherein they will abide eternally.»³

1 Soorat al-Kahf 18:29

2 Soorat al-Hajj 22:19.

3 Soorat ar-Ra'd 13:5.

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّا أَعْتَدْنَا لِلْكَافِرِينَ سَلْسِلًا وَأَغْلَالًا وَسَعِيرًا﴾ ﴿الإنسان ٤﴾

«Indeed, We have prepared for the disbelievers chains and shackles and a Blaze.»¹

And He (ﷻ) says:

﴿حُذُوهُ فَغُلُّوهُ﴾ ﴿ثُمَّ الْجَحِيمَ صَلُّوهُ﴾ ﴿ثُمَّ فِي سِلْسِلَةٍ

ذَرَعُهَا سَبْعُونَ ذِرَاعًا فَاسْلُكُوهُ﴾ ﴿الحاقة ٣٠-٣٢﴾

«(The command will be issued regarding the disbeliever,) “Seize him and shackle him, then shove him into Hellfire, then set him into a chain whose length is seventy cubits.”»²

THEIR BEDDING AND COVERING

While the people of *Jannah* will be resting on adorned couches and gold-encrusted thrones, the people of Hell will only have fire under them and above them. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿لَهُمْ مِنْ جَهَنَّمَ مِهَادٌ، وَمِنْ فَوْقِهِمْ غَوَاشٍ،

وَكَذَلِكَ نَجْزِي الظَّالِمِينَ﴾ ﴿الأعراف ٤١﴾

«They will have bedding from Hell (underneath them), and (also) coverings over them. Thus do We recompense the wrongdoers.»³

1 Soorat al-Insaan 76:4.

2 Soorat al-Haaqqah 69:30-32.

3 Soorat al-A'raaf 7:41.

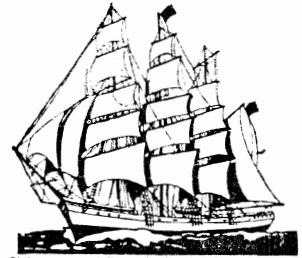
THEIR WEeping AND WAiling

The people of Hell will wail continuously over their intense and non-ending suffering, their sobs and moans quite audible for whoever can hear. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَأَمَّا الَّذِينَ شَقُوا فِيهِ النَّارَ لَهُمْ فِيهَا زَفِيرٌ وَشَهِيقٌ ﴿١٠٦﴾
 خَالِدِينَ فِيهَا مَا دَامَتِ السَّمَوَاتُ وَالْأَرْضُ، إِلَّا مَا شَاءَ
 رَبُّكَ، إِنَّ رَبَّكَ فَعَّالٌ لِّمَا يُرِيدُ ﴿١٠٧﴾﴾ هود ١٠٦-١٠٧

«As for those who will have brought misery upon themselves, they will be in the Fire, and will have therein moans and sobs. They will abide therein as long as the heavens and the earth stand — except if your Lord should will differently. Indeed, your Lord is the Accomplisher of what He wills.»¹

They will weep without break but, instead of tears coming out of their eyes, blood will come out in great amounts. 'Abdullaah Bin Qays (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:



Ships could float in their blood-tears.

﴿إن أهل النار ليبكون، حتى لو أُجريت السفن في
 دموعهم لجزت، وإنهم ليبكون الدم مكان الدمع.﴾

«Indeed, the people of the Fire will surely weep (so intensely) that ships could float in their tears. And their weeping will surely be blood instead of (normal) tears.»²

1 Soorat Hood 11:106-107.

2 Recorded by al-Haakim. Verified to be *hasan* (good) by al-Albaanee (*as-*

THEIR HUMILIATION

In Hell, there will be no regard for the disbelievers. They will be treated with the utmost humiliation. They will be shackled, neglected, and tortured. Allaah (ﷻ) honored their faces in the first life, but they insisted on rubbing them into the filth of sin and disobedience. As a suitable punishment in the next life, their faces will be rubbed in the filth and heat of Hell. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿إِنَّ الْمُجْرِمِينَ فِي ضَلَالٍ وَسُعُرٍ ﴿٤٧﴾ يَوْمَ يُسْحَبُونَ فِي النَّارِ
عَلَىٰ أَوْجُوهِهِمْ، ذُوْقُوا مَسَّ سَقَرَ.﴾ ﴿القمر ٤٧-٤٨﴾

«Indeed, the wicked are in error and madness, (awaiting) the Day when they will be dragged in the Fire on their faces, (and they will be told,) “Taste the touch of the Burner.”»¹

THEIR EMOTIONAL TORTURE

What the disbelievers will encounter in Hell is torture upon torture. Their torture will be both physical and emotional. We saw how they will be physically tortured with food, drink, clothing, and so on.

In addition, the disbelievers will suffer emotionally in different ways. They will regret disobeying Allaah (ﷻ) and His messengers, they will hate their leaders, they will hate their ancestors and family members, they will quarrel with other disbelievers whom they will be allowed to approach, and they will become beggars who will unsuccessfully ask the believers for some favors.

Saheehah no. 1679).

1 *Soorat al-Qamar* 54:47-48.

HATING THEIR LEADERS

The people of Hell will strongly express their hate toward those who diverted them from the right path and caused them to enter Hell. They will ask Allaah (ﷻ) to double their leaders' punishment and curse them most severely. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوْمَ تُقَلَّبُ وُجُوهُهُمْ فِي النَّارِ، يَقُولُونَ: "يَلَيْتَنَّا أَطَعْنَا اللَّهَ وَأَطَعْنَا الرَّسُولَ."﴾ وَقَالُوا: "رَبَّنَا إِنَّا أَطَعْنَا سَادَتَنَا وَكُبَرَاءَنَا فَأَضَلُّونَا السَّبِيلًا ﴿٦٦﴾ رَبَّنَا آتِهِمْ ضِعْفَيْنِ مِنَ الْعَذَابِ وَالْعَنَهُمْ لَعْنًا كَبِيرًا." ﴿٦٧﴾ الْأَحْزَابِ ٦٦-٦٨

«(We prepared for the disbelievers) a Day when their faces will be turned about in the Fire, and they will say, "How we wish that we had obeyed Allaah and obeyed the Messenger!" And they will say, "Our Lord, indeed we obeyed our chiefs and dignitaries, and they led us astray from the (right) path. Our Lord, give them double punishment, and curse them with a great curse."»¹

HATING THEIR RELATIVES

The people of Hell will not have any concern for their close relatives. Rather, they will wish they can be their ransom from the punishment. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَوَدُّ الْمُجْرِمُ لَوْ يَفْتَدِي مِنْ عَذَابِ يَوْمِئِذٍ بِبَنِيهِ ﴿٦٨﴾ وَصَحْبَتِهِ وَأَخِيهِ ﴿٦٩﴾ وَفَصِيلَتِهِ الَّتِي تُؤَيِّسُ لَهُ ﴿٧٠﴾ وَمَنْ فِي الْأَرْضِ جَمِيعًا﴾

1 Soorat al-Ahzaab 33:66-68.

ثُمَّ يُنَجِّهِ ﴿المعارج ١١-١٤﴾

«A wrongdoer will wish that he could ransom himself from the punishment of that Day by his children, and his wife, and his brother, and his nearest kinsfolk who used to shelter him, and whoever else lived on earth — so that he could save but himself.»¹

THEIR QUARRELLING

When they are first admitted into Hell, the disbelievers will have fierce arguments with those who enter before and after them. Each group will display its hate toward the others by asking Allaah (ﷻ) to give the others additional punishment.

Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿فَمَنْ أَظْلَمُ مِمَّنِ افْتَرَىٰ عَلَى اللَّهِ كَذِبًا أَوْ كَذَّبَ بِآيَاتِهِ؟ أُولَٰئِكَ يَنَالُهُمُ نَصِيبُهُم مِّنَ الْكِتَابِ، حَتَّىٰ إِذَا جَاءَهُمْ رُسُلُنَا يَتَوَفَّوْنَهُمْ قَالُوا: "أَيْنَ مَا كُنْتُمْ تَدْعُونَ مِن دُونِ اللَّهِ؟" قَالُوا: "ضَلُّوا عَنَّا." وَشَهِدُوا عَلَىٰ أَنفُسِهِمْ أَنَّهُمْ كَانُوا كَافِرِينَ ﴿٣٧﴾ قَالَ: "أَدْخُلُوا فِي أُمَّمٍ قَدْ خَلَتْ مِن قَبْلِكُمْ مِّنَ الْجِنِّ وَالْإِنسِ فِي النَّارِ." كُلَّمَا دَخَلَتْ أُمَّةٌ لَعَنَتْ أُخْتَهَا. حَتَّىٰ إِذَا آدَارُكُوا فِيهَا جَمِيعًا، قَالَتْ أُخْرَاهُمْ لِأَوْلِهِمْ: "رَبَّنَا هَٰؤُلَاءِ أَضَلُّونَا فَنآتَيْهِمْ عَدَابًا ضِعْفًا مِّنَ النَّارِ." قَالَ: "لِكُلِّ ضِعْفٍ وَلَكِن لَّا تَعْلَمُونَ." ﴿٣٨﴾ وَقَالَتْ أُولَاهُمْ لِأَخْرَاهُمْ: "فَمَا كَانَ لَكُمْ عَلَيْنَا مِن فَضْلٍ فَذُوقُوا الْعَذَابَ بِمَا كُنْتُمْ تَكْسِبُونَ." ﴿٣٩﴾﴾ الأعراف ٣٧-٣٩

1 Soorat al-Ma'aarij 70:11-14.

«Who could be more unjust than those who fabricate lies against Allaah or deny His messages? Those will attain their portion of the decree until, when Our messengers (i.e, angels) come to them to take them in death will say, “Where are those you used to invoke besides Allaah?” They will reply, “They have forsaken us!” They will thus bear witness against themselves that they were disbelievers.

He (Allaah) will then say, “Join those nations who have preceded you, of *jinn*s and humans, in the Fire.” Every time a nation enters, it will curse its fellow-nation.

Once they have all joined each other in it, the last of them will say about the first, “Our Lord! It is they who have misled us, so give them a double punishment in the Fire.” He will reply, “For each is double, but this you do not know.” And the first of them will say to the last, “See then! You have no advantage over us, so taste of the punishment for all that you earned!”»¹

THEIR HELPLESSNESS

In this life, the disbelievers cooperate in diverting others from Allaah’s path. They cooperate strongly and efficiently to fulfill their evil goal. In the next life, they will not be able to cooperate — not even to attempt reducing their punishment. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَلَنْ يَنْفَعَكُمْ أَلْيَوْمَ إِذْ ظَلَمْتُمْ أَنْكُم فِي الْعَذَابِ

مُشْتَرِكُونَ﴾ الزخرف ٣٩

«On that Day, it will not help you, since you did

1 Soorat al-A’raaf 7:37-39.

wrong, that you will be sharing the punishment.»¹

THEIR BEGGING

The people of Hell will beg for relief from their agonies. We saw earlier that their begging from the guarding angels will be answered by pouring boiling water over their heads. Their begging of Maalik to terminate their lives will be totally ignored.

Furthermore, they will beg of the people of *Jannah* to give them some of their food or drink. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَتَادَى أَصْحَابُ النَّارِ أَصْحَابَ الْجَنَّةِ أَنْ: "أَفِيضُوا عَلَيْنَا مِنْ الْمَاءِ أَوْ مِمَّا رَزَقَكُمُ اللَّهُ." قَالُوا: "إِنَّ اللَّهَ حَرَّمَهَا عَلَى الْكَافِرِينَ ﴿٥٠﴾ الَّذِينَ اتَّخَذُوا دِينَهُمْ لَهْوًا وَلَعِبًا وَغَرَّتْهُمُ الْحَيَاةُ الدُّنْيَا." فَالْيَوْمَ نَنْسُهُمْ كَمَا نَسُوا لِقَاءَ يَوْمِهِمْ هَذَا وَمَا كَانُوا بِآيَاتِنَا يَجْحَدُونَ ﴿٥١﴾﴾ الأعراف ٥٠-٥١

«And the people of the Fire will call to the people of *Jannah*, "Pour upon us some water or whatever Allaah has provided you." They will reply, 'Indeed, Allaah has forbidden them both to the disbelievers — those who took their religion as distraction and amusement, and who were fooled by the worldly life.' So today We will forget them just as they forgot the meeting of this Day of theirs and for having rejected Our messages.»²

This indicates that, at some point, the believers will be able to overlook the disbelievers, and the disbelievers will also be able to see the believers. This will add to the disbelievers' grief

1 Soorat az-Zukhruf 43:39.

2 Soorat al-A'raaf 7:50-51.

and to the believers' happiness.



The fire of this world is only one-seventieth of the Hellfire.

Questions and Exercises



1. In the following table, check all true statements
(39 points):

	Statement	✓
a	"Jahannam" means: very hot fire.	
b	Hell is surrounded by desires.	
c	Hell is very hot, but is otherwise nice.	
d	Hell is eternal for the disbelievers.	
e	Hell has thousands of gates.	
f	A disbeliever will need a signed pass with photograph in order to be admitted into Hell.	
g	The disbelievers will be driven to Hell in groups.	
h	Hell's mountains require seventy years to climb.	
i	Hell can see and talk.	
j	Hell will be reluctant to take in any more people before everyone is seated.	
k	Hell will have hissing and roaring.	
l	The Lord will restrain Hell with His foot.	
m	The fire of Hell is more intense than this world's fire.	
n	The fuel of Hell will be trees and petroleum.	
o	In Hell, everyone will have the same amount of pain.	
p	Some people's brain will boil in Hell.	

	Statement	✓
q	The hypocrites will be in the bottom of Hell.	
r	Those who deter from Allaah's path will receive a double punishment.	
s	Those who torment others will receive the worst punishment.	
t	The guarding angels of Hell will obey Allaah precisely.	
u	The guarding angels of Hell will sympathize with the people of Hell.	
v	Maalik is the chief angel over Hell.	
w	All people will enter Hell.	
x	Most people will not abide in Hell eternally.	
y	<i>Shirk</i> (or <i>kufr</i>) is the only sin that will cause a person to abide eternally in Hell.	
z	The disbelievers are worse than cattle.	
A	Satan will be exempt from entering Hell.	
B	The disbelievers will be brought to Hell on their knees.	
C	A believer who commits a major sin may be punished in Hell before entering <i>Jannah</i> .	
D	Following the <i>sahaabah's</i> way is part of following the Prophet (ﷺ).	
E	The only group of Muslims who will be completely safe from Hell is the <i>Jamaa'ah</i> .	
F	Corrupting the believers is a minor sin.	
G	The disbelievers in Hell will neither be dead nor alive.	

	Statement	✓
H	The people of Hell will speak to the people of <i>Jannah</i> .	
I	The people of Hell will hold meetings to solve their problems.	
J	Though in pain, the people of Hell will maintain their dignity.	
K	Cold water will occasionally be poured over the people of Hell to cool them down.	
L	The restaurants of Hell will only serve very spicy food.	
M	Nations will curse one another in Hell.	

2. Mention eight names of Hell, together with an *aayah* where each name is mentioned (16 points):

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8

3. Mention at least six types of people who will enter Hell (12 points):

1	5
2	5
3	6

4. Describe at least ten forms of torture for the people of Hell (20 points):

1	6
2	7
3	8
4	9
5	10

5. Make a comparison between pleasures of *Jannah* and tortures of Hell for each of the following items (16 points):

Item	In <i>Jannah</i>	In Hell
Food		
Drink		
Clothing		
Jewellery		
Seating		
Family		
Friends		
Status		

CHAPTER 6

CONCLUSION

Preparing for the Last Day

We have seen that the Last Day is the most tremendous Day that humans will ever witness. Its terrifying events can make a child white-haired ¹. It is the Day on which we will be returned to our Lord for detailed accounting of all that we did in our first life. It is the Day on which our eternal life will be decided: either to eternal happiness in *Jannah* — may Allaah grant it to us, or to eternal misery in Hell — may Allaah (ﷻ) forbid.

The Last Day is the Day for which we should strive by all our means. Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿وَأْتَقُوا يَوْمًا تُرْجَعُونَ فِيهِ إِلَى اللَّهِ ثُمَّ تُوَفَّى كُلُّ نَفْسٍ مَّا كَسَبَتْ وَهُمْ لَا يُظْلَمُونَ﴾ البقرة ٢٨١

«And beware of a Day when you will be returned to Allaah. Every soul will then be compensated for what it earned, and they (the people) will not be treated unjustly.» ²

And Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿يَا أَيُّهَا الَّذِينَ آمَنُوا اتَّقُوا اللَّهَ وَلْتَنْظُرْ نَفْسٌ مَّا قَدَّمتْ لِغَدٍ وَاتَّقُوا اللَّهَ، إِنَّ اللَّهَ خَبِيرٌ بِمَا تَعْمَلُونَ﴾ وَلَا تَكُونُوا كَالَّذِينَ نَسُوا اللَّهَ فَأَنسَاهُمْ

1 As in Soorat al-Muzzammil 73:17.

2 Soorat al-Baqarah 2:281.

أَنفُسَهُمْ، أَوْلَئِكَ هُمُ الْفَاسِقُونَ ﴿٢٠﴾ لَا يَسْتَوِي أَصْحَابُ النَّارِ وَأَصْحَابُ
الْجَنَّةِ، أَصْحَابُ الْجَنَّةِ هُمُ الْفَائِزُونَ ﴿٢١﴾ الحشر ١٨-٢٠

«O you who believe, revere and fear Allaah, and let every soul examine what it has put forth for tomorrow. Revere and fear Allaah for, indeed, Allaah is Well-Acquainted with what you do. And be not like those who forgot Allaah, so He made them forget themselves — those are the stubborn disobedient people. They cannot be equal: the people of the Fire and the people of *Jannah*. The people of *Jannah* are the successful.»¹

Jannah

We saw that *Jannah* is filled with wonders that will never end, but the path to it surrounded by struggle and hardships. Those who earnestly work for it will surely enter it.

In *Jannah*, there will be no sins or useless talk. Every corner will resound with glorification of Allaah (ﷻ), and the angels will constantly greet the believers with *salaam* (peace). Allaah (ﷻ) says:

﴿جَنَّاتُ عَدْنٍ يَدْخُلُونَهَا وَمَنْ صَلَحَ مِنْ آبَائِهِمْ وَأَزْوَاجِهِمْ
وَذُرِّيَّتِهِمْ وَالْمَلَائِكَةُ يَدْخُلُونَ عَلَيْهِمْ مِنْ كُلِّ بَابٍ ﴿٢٤﴾ سَلَّمَ
عَلَيْكُمْ بِمَا صَبَرْتُمْ فَنِعْمَ عُقْبَى الدَّارِ ﴿٢٣﴾﴾ الرعد ٢٣-٢٤

«(The believers' reward will be) Gardens of '*Adn* that they will enter with whoever were righteous among their fathers, their spouses, and their descendants. And angels will enter upon them

1 Soorat al-Hashr 59:18-20.

from every gate (with the greeting), "Peace unto you for that you persevered in patience! How excellent is your final Home!»¹

The people of *Jannah* will live in peace and satisfaction, never getting tired, sick, or old. With no place in their heart for hatred, they will all be beloved brothers to one another.

This, without any doubt, is the place where we want to be. So let us strive hard for it, and let us make sincere *du'aa'* to Allaah to admit us into it.

Hell

We saw, on the other hand, that Hell is the most gruesome place. Its torture is worse than anything that we can imagine. It is ugly and loathsome beyond description, but the path to it is surrounded by deceitful desires and temptations. Yet, those who earnestly work to avoid it will surely be saved from it.

Hell, without any doubt, is a place where we never want to be. We do not want to have even the slightest taste of it. We want to be of those who will swiftly cross the *Siraat* that will be extended over it. So, let us strive by all our might to avoid it, and let us make sincere *du'aa'* to Allaah to protect us from it.

Supplication

With all our heart, we should ask Allaah (ﷻ) repeatedly to shelter us from the hideous Hell and to admit us into the beautiful *Jannah*, *aameen*.

Anas (رضي الله عنه) reported that the Prophet (ﷺ) said:



1 Soorat ar-Ra'd 13:23-24.

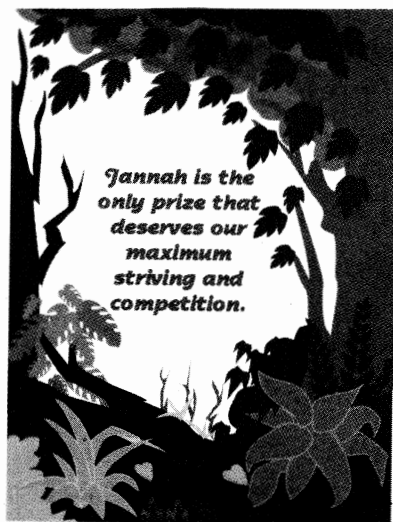
«مَنْ سَأَلَ اللَّهَ الْجَنَّةَ ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ قَالَتْ الْجَنَّةُ: "اللَّهُمَّ ادْخُلْهُ الْجَنَّةَ." وَمَنْ

أَسْتَجَارَ مِنَ النَّارِ ثَلَاثَ مَرَّاتٍ قَالَتْ النَّارُ: "اللَّهُمَّ أَجِرْهُ مِنَ النَّارِ."»

«When a person asks Allaah three times to admit him into *Jannah*, *Jannah* says, "O Allaah, admit him into *Jannah*." And when a person asks Allaah three times to protect him from Hell, Hell says, "O Allaah, protect him from Hell."»¹

﴿رَبَّنَا آتِنَا فِي الدُّنْيَا حَسَنَةً وَفِي الْآخِرَةِ حَسَنَةً وَقِنَا عَذَابَ النَّارِ﴾ البقرة ٢٠١

«Our Lord, give us in this world good and in the hereafter good, and protect us from the punishment of the Fire.»²



1 Recorded by at-Tirmithi, an-Nasaa'ee, and others. Verified to be authentic by al-Albaanee (*al-Mishkaat* no. 2412).

2 *Soorat al-Baqarah* 2:201.

ARABIC VOCABULARY

Term	Meaning
<i>Aayah</i>	Approximately one sentence of the Qur'aan. Plural: <i>aayaat</i> .
' <i>Aalim</i>	Scholar. Plural: ' <i>Ulamaa'</i> .
' <i>Abd</i>	Servant of (Allaah).
Al-Ka'bah	The House of worship in Makkah. All of the Muslims face it in their prayers.
Al-Madeenah	The town in Arabia where the Prophet (ﷺ) built his mosque and lived the last ten years of his life.
<i>Deen</i>	Religion.
<i>Eemaan</i>	Faith or belief.
<i>Hadeeth</i>	A saying or an action of the Prophet (ﷺ).
<i>Hajj</i>	Pilgrimage.
<i>Ihsaan</i>	Worshiping and fearing Allaah as if you can see Him.
<i>Jahannam</i>	The hell fire.
<i>Jannah</i>	The gardens of Paradise.
<i>Jinn</i>	Invisible creatures that Allaah created from smoke.

Term	Meaning
<i>Kaafir</i>	A person who rejects the faith in Allaah after it has been clarified to him. Plural: <i>kuffaar</i> .
<i>Khutbah</i>	Speech.
Makkah	The hometown of the Prophet (ﷺ).
<i>Masjid</i>	Mosque. The place where Muslims pray.
<i>Mu'min</i>	Believer or one who has <i>eemaan</i> .
<i>Qadar</i>	Destiny or decree.
<i>Ramadhaan</i>	The month of fasting.
<i>Sahaabee</i>	Companion of the Prophet (ﷺ). Plural: <i>Sahaabah</i> .
<i>Salaah</i>	The prayer.
<i>Salaf</i>	The early righteous Muslims.
<i>Shahaadah</i>	Testimony.
<i>Sujood</i>	Putting the forehead down on the ground in prayer to Allaah.
Sunnah	The Prophet's teachings.
<i>Soorah</i>	Chapter of the Qur'aan.
<i>Tafseer</i>	Explanation of the <i>Qur'aan</i> .
<i>Thikr</i>	Mentioning Allaah by heart and tongue. Plural: <i>athkaar</i> .
<i>Zakaah</i>	Obligatory charity in Islaam.

PUBLISHED TITLES BY THE AUTHOR

The Inevitable Journey

1. Sickness, Regulations and Exhortations, 2nd Ed., 327 pp, HB, 2003.
2. The Final Bequest, the Islāmic Law of Inheritance, 148 pp, 1999.
3. Funerals, Regulations and Exhortations, 2nd Ed., 326 pp, HB, 2003.
4. Life in *al-Barzakh*, 126 pp, 1998.

The Muslim Family

1. Quest for Love & Mercy (Regulations for Marriage & Wedding in Islām), 211 pp, 2000.
2. Closer than a Garment (Marital Intimacy According to the Pure Sunnah), 220 pp, 2000.
3. The Fragile Vessels (Rights & Obligations Between the Spouses in Islām), 191 pp, 2000.
4. Our Precious Sprouts (Islāmic Regulations for Newborns), 234 pp, 2002.

Enter Into Islām Completely

1. The Beard between the *Salaf* & *Khalaf*, 47 pp, 1999.
2. Smoking, a Social Poison, 51 pp, 1999.
3. Islāmic Perspective of Contraception & Abortion, 64 pp, 2000.
4. Regulations of Worship During Menses, 86 pp, 2001.

Īmān Made Easy

1. Knowing Allāh, 2nd Ed., 127 pp, 2002.
2. Knowing the Angels, 2nd Ed., 131 pp, 2003.
3. Knowing Allāh's Books & the Qur'ān, 2nd Ed., 124 pp, 2003.
4. Knowing Allāh's Prophets & Messengers, 127 pp., 2002.
5. Knowing the Last Day, 216 pp., 2004.

Stories from the Sunnah

1. Ibrāhīm, A Nation in One Man, 184 pp, 2003.

Other Titles

1. The Night Prayers, *Qiyām* & *Tarāwīh*, 2nd Ed., 195 pp, 1999.
2. *Ar-Risālat ut-Tabūkiyyah* (the Magnificent Journey), 2nd Ed., 136 pp, 2001.
3. Celebrations in Islām, 120 pp, 1996.
4. Fundamentals of Commanding Good & Forbidding Evil According to Ibn Taymiyyah, 54 pp, 1997.
5. Allāh's Right upon His Servants: *Tawhīd* vs. *Shirk*, 51 pp, 1995 (out of print).
6. The Qur'ān and the Sunnah, 38 pp, 1982 (out of print).